


# A Brief History of the Philippines



LEANDRO HERIBERTO FERNÁNDEZ



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2025

## **A Brief History of the Philippines**









# A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

BY

LEANDRO H. FERNÁNDEZ, A.M.

ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF HISTORY IN THE  
UNIVERSITY OF THE PHILIPPINES



GINN AND COMPANY

BOSTON • NEW YORK • CHICAGO • LONDON  
ATLANTA • DALLAS • COLUMBUS • SAN FRANCISCO

DSG  
EX

COPYRIGHT, 1919, BY GINN AND COMPANY  
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

519.7

TO THE  
ABBOTTS

**The Athenaeum Press**  
GINN AND COMPANY • PRO-  
PRIETORS • BOSTON • U.S.A.

TO

THE FILIPINO YOUTH

ON WHOSE LOYALTY TO DUTY

WILL DEPEND IN A LARGE MEASURE THE

WELFARE OF THE COUNTRY

416769



## PREFACE

This book is an introduction to the study of Philippine history. It is a brief account of the important events in Philippine history arranged with a view to giving pupils in the intermediate school a basic knowledge of the history of their own country.

Controversial views have purposely been omitted, on the ground that such discussions, though they may be of advantage to maturer students, serve only to confuse young pupils.

One of the chief objects of a text on national history is to give pupils an idea of the development of the country and the people. Consequently stress has been laid on the development of the Philippine Islands and of the Filipino people.

The author has drawn freely from original sources, namely, Pigafetta, Transylvanus, Plasencia, Loarca, Chirino, Morga, Colin, and others, the most of which material is printed either in part or as a whole in Blair and Robertson's "The Philippine Islands"; he has also made use of some of the rare documents and pamphlets in the Philippine Library; furthermore, he has consulted Montero, Martínez de Zúñiga, Comyn, LeRoy, and others of the later historians of the Philippines, and also the writings of several of the best-known travelers, Jagor, Bowring, and Mallat.

The author is indebted to many persons who have kindly aided him in various ways in the preparation of this book: especially to Professor Conrado Benitez, Head of the Department of Economics and Sociology, University of the



Philippines; to Professor H. Otley Beyer of the same department; to Hugo H. Miller, former Head of the Industrial Division of the Bureau of Education; to Professor Maximo M. Kalaw, Head of the Department of Political Science; to Nicolas Zafra of the Department of History; and to Emma S. Yule, Head of the Department of English of the College of Agriculture.

LEANDRO H. FERNÁNDEZ

UNIVERSITY OF THE PHILIPPINES, MANILA

# CONTENTS

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| CHAPTER I. THE PEOPLE . . . . .   | I    |
| The Aetas. The Indonesians. The Malays. Hindu culture. The contact between the groups. The purchase of Panay Island by civilized Malays. The Moros. Mohammedanism. Summary  |      |
| CHAPTER II. THE DISCOVERY BY MAGELLAN . . . .   | 14   |
| The trade between Europe and Asia. Increase of trade. The need of a new trade route. The Portuguese navigators. The voyage of Columbus. The discovery of America. The Line of Demarcation. Ferdinand Magellan. The Molukkas, or Spice Islands. Magellan in search of the western route. The fleet. The trip to Port Saint Julian. The mutiny. The discovery of the strait. The Pacific. The Ladrões. The discovery of the Philippines. Magellan in Cebu. The death of Magellan. The vengeance of a slave. The Spice Islands at last. The return trip. Summary |      |
| CHAPTER III. EXPLORATION AND CONQUEST . . . .   | 37   |
| The quarrel over the Molukkas. The expedition of Loaisa. The expedition of Saavedra. The Line of Demarcation of 1529. The expedition of Villalobos. The colonization of the Philippines. The first Spanish settlement. Legaspi's peace policy. Early difficulties. Legaspi removes to Panay. Orders from Spain. The early conquests. The first expedition to Manila. The second expedition to Manila. The death of the adelantado. The conquest of Luzon. The death of Salcedo. The extent of the Spanish power   |      |
| CHAPTER IV. FILIPINO LIFE AT THE TIME OF THE CONQUEST . . . . .   | 55   |
| Early population. The classes of people. The government. Wars. The early laws. Land ownership. The early industries.  |      |

The early trade. Cultural conditions. The religious beliefs.  
The *simbahan*. The house of the *anitos*. Priests and priestesses.  
The sacrifice. Marriage customs. Burial customs. Summary

CHAPTER V. CHANGES INTRODUCED BY THE SPAN-      76  
IARDS . . . . .

Spain's desire to spread Christianity. The conversion of the  
Filipinos. Christianity established. The abolition of slavery.  
Teaching the Filipinos. The schools. The local government.  
The *encomiendas*. The enforced labor. The early rebellions.  
The provincial and municipal governments. The city of  
Manila. The effect of Spanish rule

CHAPTER VI. THE CHINESE IN THE PHILIPPINES . .      89

The origin of the word *sangley*. Early trade relations. The  
invasion of Limahong. An early treaty with the Chinese.  
The attitude toward the Chinese. The Chinese revolt of  
1603. The revolt of 1639. The revolt of 1662. Tingco's  
conspiracy. Attempts to supplant the Chinese with Spanish  
and mestizo traders. Chinese immigration

CHAPTER VII. THE PORTUGUESE AND THE DUTCH .      101

Portugal's title to the Philippines. The Portuguese in Min-  
danao. The blockade of Cebu. The Portuguese expedition  
of 1570. The conquest of Portugal by Spain. Why the  
Dutch came to the East. Attempts to drive away the Dutch.  
The first battle of Mariveles. Acuña's expedition against the  
Dutch in the Molukkas. The second battle of Mariveles.  
Silva's expedition. The battle of Playa Honda. Continued  
Dutch visits. The end of the Dutch wars. Summary

CHAPTER VIII. THE RESTRICTIVE COMMERCIAL      110  
POLICY . . . . .

The commercial situation before the Spanish conquest. The  
port of Manila. The trade with Mexico. The restrictions on  
trade. The rich cargoes. The *Obras Pías*

# CONTENTS

ix

PAGE

## CHAPTER IX. IMPORTANT REVOLTS IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY . . . . . 118

Attitude of the Filipinos toward Spanish sovereignty. The Tamblot rebellion in Bohol. The apostasy of Banca. A Bornean pretender. The Pampanga revolt of 1645. The Sumoroy rebellion of 1649-1650. The Pampanga revolt of 1660. Malong's rebellion. The Ilocos revolt of 1661. Summary

## CHAPTER X. THE CONFLICT BETWEEN THE STATE AND THE CHURCH . . . . . 129

The state and the church. Lavezaris and Rada. Ronquillo and Salazar. The Episcopal Court. The right of sanctuary. Corcuera and Guerrero. The residencia of Corcuera. Salcedo and the Inquisition. Vargas and Pardo. Bustamante and Cuesta. The effect of these quarrels. Summary

## CHAPTER XI. THE WARS WITH THE MOROS . . . . . 138

The origin of the name *Moro*. The home of the Mohammedan Filipinos. De Sande's attempt to subjugate the Moros. Moro raids at the close of the sixteenth century. Punitive expeditions. The founding of Zamboanga. Tagal's defeat at Punta de Flechas. Corcuera's expedition. Cosío and the Moros. The expedition of 1731. The erection of lookout towers. The concentration of the coast dwellers. Ali Mudin and the Spaniards. War with fire and sword. The retaliation of Bantilan. The treaty of 1753. The exploits of a militant Jesuit. Arandía and the Moro princes

## CHAPTER XII. THE BRITISH OCCUPATION AND THE REVOLTS THAT FOLLOWED . . . . . 149

Why the British came. The arrival of the British. The landing. The defenses of Manila. The resistance. The surrender. The terms of surrender. Simón de Anda. Controversy between Rojo and Anda. The policy of Anda. Busto and Backhouse. The British expedition to Bulacan. The treasure of the Philippino. Spain's loss of prestige. Revolt in Pangasinan. Revolt in Ilocos Sur. The revolt in Cagayan. The

disturbances in Laguna and Batangas provinces. The treaty of peace. English foothold in Sulu. Summary

CHAPTER XIII. BEGINNINGS OF THE FILIPINO CLERGY 161

Two kinds of clergymen. The arrival of the regulars. The partition of the Archipelago. The parishes. The question of visitation. The Camacho controversy. Santa Justa and Raon. The beginning of secularization. The expulsion of the Jesuits. Further secularization. Anda's memorial. Secularization under Anda. Charges against the Filipino priests. The end of secularization. Summary

CHAPTER XIV. ECONOMIC AND POLITICAL PROGRESS 170

Basco's policy. The Economic Society of Friends of the Country. The monopoly of tobacco. The Royal Company of the Philippines. Other government monopolies. Protests against the monopolies. The Kalinga uprising. The conquest of the Batanes. Berenguer's proposed reforms. The scientific survey of the Philippines. Moro piracy. Philippine navy. Progress. Summary

CHAPTER XV. FILIPINO REPRESENTATION IN THE CORTES . . . . . 180

The Cortes. Spain under Napoleon. The Philippines in the Cortes of 1810-1813. The first newspaper in Manila. The Constitution of 1812. The dissolution of the Cortes. The Constitution and the Filipinos. Wise measures of Governor Gardoqui. The Cortes of 1820. The Philippines in the Cortes of 1820-1823. The separation from Mexico. More newspapers. The Philippines in the Cortes of 1834-1835. The end of Philippine representation in the Cortes. The meaning of freedom

CHAPTER XVI. UPRISINGS AND REFORMS . . . . . 188

The cholera epidemic of 1820. Folgueras's measures for the protection of health. The mutiny of Novales. Calamities. Ricafort's social reforms. Economic measures. The end of the Bohol rebellion. The segregation of the Chinese. Galvey's



# CONTENTS

xi

## PAGE

expedition. The building of roads. The work of Peñaranda. Why good roads are necessary. Changes in the government of the provinces

## CHAPTER XVII. FROM LARDIZÁBAL TO URBIZTONDO 198

The censorship of books. The school of commerce. Apolinario de la Cruz. The Cofradía of San José. King Apolinario. The suppression of the brotherhood. The mutiny of Samaniego. Governor Narciso Clavería. The correction of the calendar. Reforms in provincial and municipal governments. Filipinos receive surnames. The settlement of Zamboanga. Other European nations in Mindanao. The expedition of Oyanguren. Clavería and the Samals. Arrival of steamships. Urbiztondo and the Joloans. The treaty with the sultan

## CHAPTER XVIII. COMMERCE AND EDUCATION . . . 207

The opening of the port of Manila. The foreign firms. The Banco Español-Filipino. The opening of more ports. The increase in agriculture. A Filipino middle class. The press. The censorship of the press. The return of the Jesuits. The early education. The educational reforms of 1863. The higher schools. A Filipino enlightened class. The earthquake of 1863

## CHAPTER XIX. THE LIBERAL MOVEMENT AND THE REACTION. . . . . 218

The Spanish Revolution of 1868. The opening of the Suez Canal. Carlos de la Torre, 1869-1871. The Spanish liberals. La Torre's attitude toward the Filipinos. The governor's reception. Filipino reformers. The opposition. The policy of Izquierdo. The Cavite Revolt of 1872. The results. Doctor José Burgos. Summary

## CHAPTER XX. THE REFORM MOVEMENT . . . . . 229

The enforced peace. Growth of commerce. A revival of agitation. The reform in taxation. Reforms in local government. Other reforms desired. The reform movement. Late attempts at reform. Summary

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| CHAPTER XXI. THE PHILIPPINE REVOLUTION. . . . .   | 240  |
| <p>The Katipunan. A period of terror. The beginning of the Revolution. Polavieja's campaign. The policy of Primo de Rivera. Aguinaldo's proclamation of independence. The Pact of Biacnabato. Peace restored. Fresh grievances against Spain. The coming of the Americans. Dewey and Aguinaldo. Renewal of the war. The dictatorship. The Revolutionary Government. The fall of Manila. The treaty of peace. Summary</p>  |      |
| CHAPTER XXII. RELATIONS WITH THE UNITED STATES. . . . .   | 261  |
| <p>Cession of the Philippines to the United States. Intentions of the United States. The Philippine Republic. Instruction from Washington. The claims of the Filipinos. The battle of Manila. The Americans in the Visayan Islands. The fall of Malolos. The battle of Zapote Bridge. The campaign in the north. The death of Luna. The retreat of Aguinaldo. The defense of Tila Pass. The guerrilla warfare. The exile of Filipino leaders. The capture of General Aguinaldo. Summary</p>   |      |
| CHAPTER XXIII. THE ESTABLISHMENT OF AMERICAN RULE. . . . .  | 274  |
| <p>The military rule. The first Philippine Commission. The second Philippine Commission. The advocates of peace. The Federal party. The establishment of the schools. The organization of the judiciary. The reorganization of the municipalities. The civil government. Difficulties of the new government. The last year of the war. The friar lands. The Aglipay schism. The reforms in the currency. The retirement of Governor Taft. Wright's policy. The construction of roads and railways. The improvements of the ports. The metric system. The postal savings banks. The public health. Summary</p> |      |
| CHAPTER XXIV. A NEW BEGINNING . . . . .   | 291  |
| <p>A period of calm. The Independista parties. The reorganization of the Federal party. The convention of provincial governors. The census of 1903. The Philippine Assembly.</p>  |      |



# CONTENTS

xiii

PAGE

The conflicts between the Assembly and the Commission.  
Improvement in the means of communication. The resident  
commissioners. Quezón's campaign. Harrison's administra-  
tion. Filipinos have control of the legislature. Rapid Filipini-  
zation. The Jones bills. America's purpose defined. Home  
rule. The policy of nationalization. The finances of the  
government. The increase in foreign trade and prosperity.  
The future

## APPENDIX

I. LIST OF IMPORTANT DATES AND EVENTS . . . 309

II. THE PHILIPPINE AUTONOMY ACT . . . . . 313

INDEX . . . . . 333



DOCTOR JOSÉ RIZAL

# A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

## CHAPTER I

### THE PEOPLE

#### THE FIRST INHABITANTS

**The Aetas.** In the Philippine Islands there are three distinct types of people, the Aetas, the Indonesians, and the Malays. The Aetas are the aborigines of these islands. This means that, so far as is known, they have always lived here. But they are not all alike; there are at least two groups of them. One group the Spaniards called Negritos, because they were short and black. The men are only about one hundred and forty-five centimeters tall; the women are still shorter. They have dark skins, flat noses, and black hair, which is short and kinky. The people who live in the Zambales Mountains belong to this group.

The other group of Aetas are short, like the Negritos, but their hair is straight, and their skin is a lighter brown. They have round faces, thick lips, and small noses. Their eyes are brown and are set far apart. To this group belong the Mangyan people, who live in northern Mindoro.

The Aetas are not a civilized people. Most of them have no fixed homes, but wander from place to place. They

## BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

have few wants, and these are easily satisfied. Some of the tribes raise mountain rice, but change their fields frequently. A large part of their food consists of wild roots. They also catch fish in the rivers and lakes, and hunt deer, wild pigs, monkeys, and birds.



A NEGrito WOMAN

Some of the Aetas live in houses. They have learned this from their more civilized neighbors. In the past few years the government has made efforts to induce them to live in permanent villages, and to send their children to school. These efforts have been partly successful.

Barbarous races cannot long exist side by side with those that are civilized. If they do not become civilized themselves, they perish. This is what is happening to the Aetas. They are slowly disappearing. Once on a time they wandered through the forests

on all the larger islands. Then the Indonesians came, and later the Malays. Many of the Aetas were taken by them as servants or slaves. The others fled deeper into the woods and mountains. As the population increased, the forests became smaller, because more land was cultivated by the Indonesians and Malays. The Aetas became fewer and fewer; and to-day they are found chiefly in the mountains of Luzon, Panay, Negros, Mindoro, Palawan, and Mindanao.

## THE IMMIGRATING PEOPLES

**The Indonesians.** A second group in the Philippines are the Indonesians. Men who make a study of the races of people think that the Indonesians lived originally in south-eastern Asia and in the islands southwest of the Philippines. From there they made their way to the Philippines. They did not, however, all come at one time. There were many waves of people that came in. We do not know just when the first Indonesians arrived at the Philippines; but it was many thousands of years ago. Some people believe they came by boats. Others believe they came by land, which was quite possible; for we know that the Philippines were once a part of the continent of Asia.

Peoples of pure Indonesian stock can still be traced in these islands. They are to be found in the mountains of eastern Mindanao, Panay, Negros, and northern Luzon. The Mandayas in eastern Mindanao, and some of the Apayaos in northern Luzon are of this type. They are tall and slender, with long, sharp faces and high-bridged noses. Their eyes are set close together. Their hair is long and wavy. The color of their skin is not uniform; some of them are very dark, and others are of light complexion.

The later Indonesian peoples who came to the Philippines were not of pure stock; for they had been mixed with the Mongols.

The Mongol peoples lived originally in central Asia. From there, several thousand years ago, they began to spread out in many directions. Some of them went eastward, making their way into Japan, Formosa, the Philippines, and other islands. Those who came to Formosa and



the Philippines mixed with the first groups of Indonesians, who had already come to these islands from the south. Other Mongols, who had spread into southeastern Asia, mixed with the Indonesians there. This explains why the later groups of people who came into the Philippines from the southwest were not pure Indonesians.



A TYPICAL MALAY (MORO) BOAT

**The Malays.** Most of the people who are found to-day in the valleys and plains of the Philippines are Malays. They were from the south, from the Malay Peninsula and the Malay Archipelago. They came in waves, and spread over the fertile lands. Those that came first were rather primitive. We will call them the primitive Malays.

Most of the primitive Malays of the present day live in the mountains. They are not so primitive as the Aetas. They build houses of boards, and they cultivate their land.

They raise maize, camotes, mountain rice, tobacco, and many vegetables. But they still have some barbarous customs. They are pagans. Very few of them have become Christians or Mohammedans. The Subanuns of Mindanao and the Tagbanuas of Palawan are of this type.



Courtesy of H. O. Beyer

AN IFUGAO HOUSE, A TYPE OF HOUSE IN THE CORDILLERA

The Malays who came later were semicivilized. We will call them the semicivilized Malays. The Ifugaos and Igorots of northern Luzon, for example, understand irrigation. They have converted their mountains into terraces for growing rice. Water is carried to these terraces by ditches and flumes, so that two crops are often produced in a year. The terraces of the Ifugaos are said to be the largest in the world.



After the primitive and the semicivilized Malays, there came others who were still more civilized. These newcomers had better weapons. They put on more clothes. They had markets, and weights and measures. They were intelligent and industrious.

They were civilized. We will call them the civilized Malays.

The civilized Malays are the ancestors of many of the present Christian and Mohammedan Filipinos. They were neither Christian nor Mohammedan when they first came. They were pagan. But later, Mohammedan priests came from the south and preached to them the religion of Mohammed. Still later, Spanish priests from Europe preached to them the religion of Christ. When the Spaniards first found these cultured Malayans, they were few in number. Now they are many. They live along the coasts and



AN IGOROT WOMAN, A REPRESENTATIVE OF THE MOUNTAIN PEOPLES OF THE CORDILLERA

in many of the river valleys and plains throughout the islands.

*When they came.* Just when the Malays arrived in the Philippines is not known. We only know that as early as the fifth century of the Christian Era they were found by the Hindus on the island of Java. This was about a thousand years before the Portuguese navigator Vasco da Gama reached India. From Java the Malays probably went to Borneo, and

from Borneo to the Philippines. It took them many years to reach these shores. Some of the civilized Malays probably came as late as the fourteenth or fifteenth century, but most of them were here at a much earlier period than that.

*How they came.* The civilized Malays traveled in a large and swift kind of native boat, called barangay. In each boat was a dato, or chief, with his followers. Some of the Malays arrived at Luzon, by way of Borneo, Balabac, Palawan, the Calamian Islands, and Mindoro. Others reached Mindanao, by way of the Sulu Archipelago and Basilan. From Mindanao they came to the Visayan Islands. In this manner the Malay wanderers found a new home.

#### SOURCE OF THE FIRST CIVILIZATION

**Hindu culture.** Why were the Malays who came later to the Philippine Islands more civilized than those who had come first? A person is influenced by his friends or neighbors. He often does what they do, and often becomes what they are. An ignorant boy who lives with educated men will learn to do many things in their way. This is true of peoples also.

More than two thousand years ago India had a wonderful civilization. At that time the Hindus had many great cities. They built large stone houses and palaces. They had systems of writing. They developed poetry and philosophy. They had two great religions, Brahmanism and Buddhism. About fifteen hundred years ago this civilization of the Hindus spread over Burma, Siam, and the island of Java. At that time Java was inhabited by Malays. The neighboring islands of Malaysia were also occupied by the same kind of people. In this way the Malayans were greatly

affected by Hindu civilization. The Malays that came to the Philippines at a later period gave signs of this Hindu influence. They were, therefore, better civilized than those who had come earlier.

#### THE BLENDING OF THE RACES

**The contact between the groups.** So we find Aetas, Indonesians, and primitive, semicivilized, and civilized Malays in the Philippines. But at the present time we see that the civilized Malays occupy the best lands, and are greatly in the majority. There are more than a million and a half of the civilized Malays, a little more than three quarters of a million of the semicivilized Malays, and fewer than a quarter of a million of the primitive Malays. How did this come about?

When the Malays came to the Philippines, they found Aetas and Indonesians already here. Some places the newcomers occupied peacefully. In other places they met opposition; but they had more knowledge of warfare than the inhabitants, and better weapons, and were often able to make slaves or servants of the conquered peoples.

The civilized Malays who came last also conquered many of the primitive Malays who lived in the plains. These primitive Malays became serfs and worked the lands of their conquerors. Only those peoples who lived in the mountains and forests were not conquered by the cultured Malays.

Later the civilized Malays in the south were converted to Mohammedanism; those in the north became Christians. The chiefs, the privileged classes, the serfs, and the slaves were nearly all converted and civilized. Only those who lived in the mountains and forests remained pagans.

The civilized Filipinos have become so mixed and blended that to-day the descendants of the primitive Malays cannot be distinguished from those of the cultured Malays. Those whose ancestors were Europeans, Indonesians, or Aetas can sometimes be told by their different features. Men who make a study of races believe that in the future there will be a common Malay type, which may be called the Filipino race.

#### AN EARLY SETTLEMENT

**The purchase of Panay Island by civilized Malays.** There is an old story about the purchase of Panay by civilized Malays from Borneo. Some of the inhabitants of Panay were Aetas. Their chief was called Marikudo. He and his family lived in a place called Sinogbuhan, near the southern point of the island.

One day ten datos with their families arrived from Borneo. They landed on the bank of the Sinaragan River. From there they went to Sinogbuhan, where they found Marikudo and his people. Marikudo asked them what they wanted. They answered that they wished to buy some land. Marikudo blew a horn to call his subjects together. He told them what the newcomers wanted. A great feast was prepared to welcome the Malays from Borneo. They ate and danced. Then the sale of the land was agreed on. The territory included all the land that a man could encircle by traveling from the time of the planting of rice till harvest time. For this territory the Malays paid one gold sadok, or hat made of gold, and a gold necklace. After the sale Marikudo and his followers went to the mountains. By this bargain the Malays of Borneo became owners of the level land of Panay Island.



*An ancient Malay settlement.* The kind of life these Malays lived may be learned from their early settlement in Panay. Tradition tells us that when the Malays had bought a part of the land from the Aetas, they established themselves in Malandog. They put the slaves to work. They cleared the land. They made kaingins. They planted rice and many other things, such as buri, nipa, and bamboo shoots. They caught fish. Thus lived the first Malayan settlement in Panay Island.

Soon other settlements were founded. The most important of these were on the banks of the Aklan River; they were established by Dato Paiburong. In all these settlements the lands were cleared, and rice, coconuts, and nipa were planted.

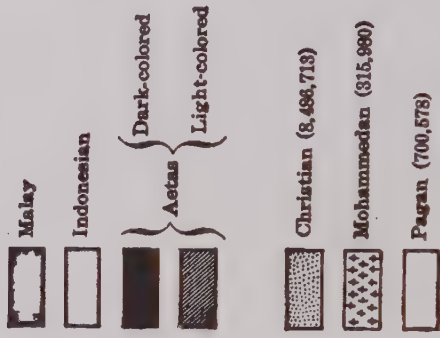
*The Confederation of Madiaas.* The Malays called the island Madiaas. For the purpose of government the datos agreed to divide Madiaas into three sakops, or districts. The sakops were called Hantik, Aklan, and Irong-irong. Each sakop was under the rule of a dato. But Dato Samakuel, the ruler of Hantik, had more power than the datos of Aklan and Irong-irong. He was the Superior Dato. He and four other datos acted as judges. All the datos together inspected the settlements. Everybody had to work. A man who did no work was punished. Sometimes he was banished to the mountains.

#### THE MOHAMMEDAN FILIPINOS

**The Moros.** Many of the civilized Malays who came here just before Magellan discovered the islands professed the Mohammedan religion. They settled in the southern islands and converted the inhabitants to Mohammedanism. Then they began to migrate to some of the northern islands. When



# PHILIPPINE ISLANDS DISTRIBUTION OF PEOPLES



Prepared by  
H. OTLEY BEYER  
MANILA, 1918







B O R N E O



When Spaniards arrived, the Mohammedans were found in the Sulu Archipelago, on the coasts of Mindanao and Palawan, in Mindoro, and even in southern Luzon. At present they



A PAGE FROM A MORO KORAN

live for the most part in Mindanao, the Sulu Archipelago, and in southern Palawan. They are known as Moros.

**Mohammedanism.** Mohammedanism was founded by an Arab named Mohammed or Mahomet. Mohammed was born of poor parents about the year 570, in the city of Mecca. From childhood he gave his time to thinking about

religious things. He lived in a cave on Mount Hara, near Mecca, that he might be alone. In the beginning of the seventh century he founded a new religion. He taught that there was but one God, called Allah. He taught also that he, Mohammed, was the chosen teacher of the way to worship this God. His followers say, "There is no God but Allah, and Mohammed is his Prophet."

The followers of Mohammed were zealous in spreading their faith. They forced other peoples to recognize their religion. They armed themselves and fought those who refused to obey them. They conquered Asia Minor and northern Africa. Then they entered Europe, first by way of Spain and later by way of the Balkan Peninsula. They carried their religion to the East also. Mohammedan priests sailed through the Red Sea southward to the island of Madagascar and eastward to India. Even the merchants preached the new religion. From India they went to the islands of the Malay Archipelago.

Sumatra accepted the new religion as early as the year 1250. A Mohammedan settlement was established in Borneo about the year 1400. About this time also two Malay Mohammedan princes reached Sulu and Mindanao. They were Rajah Baginda and Shereef Kabungsuwan. Rajah Baginda introduced Mohammedanism into Sulu, and Kabungsuwan into Mindanao.

**Summary.** The aboriginal inhabitants of the Philippine Islands were the Aetas. The immigrant peoples were the Indonesians and the Malays. In the Philippines there has been a blending of the Malays with the Indonesians. All the peoples in the Islands are becoming more and more like the Malay type, and some day there will probably be a single Filipino race.

QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. How many kinds of peoples are there in the Philippine Islands? Which of these constitutes the aborigines?
2. In what way were the Aetas different from the peoples who came later? Were the peoples who came later all alike?
3. Who were the Indonesians? Are there any pure Indonesians still in the Philippines? What became of the Indonesian immigrants?
4. Who were the primitive Malays? the semicivilized Malays?
5. Who were the civilized Malays? Explain how they had become civilized.
6. How did the Malays come to Panay? How did they obtain the land? How did they settle it and govern themselves? Who were some of their important leaders?
7. How and when was Mohammedanism introduced into the Philippines? Who was Rajah Baginda? Who was Kabungsuwan?

TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. Differences between the primitive, the semicivilized, and the civilized Malays.
2. The barangays.
3. Mohammedanism outside the Philippines.



## CHAPTER II

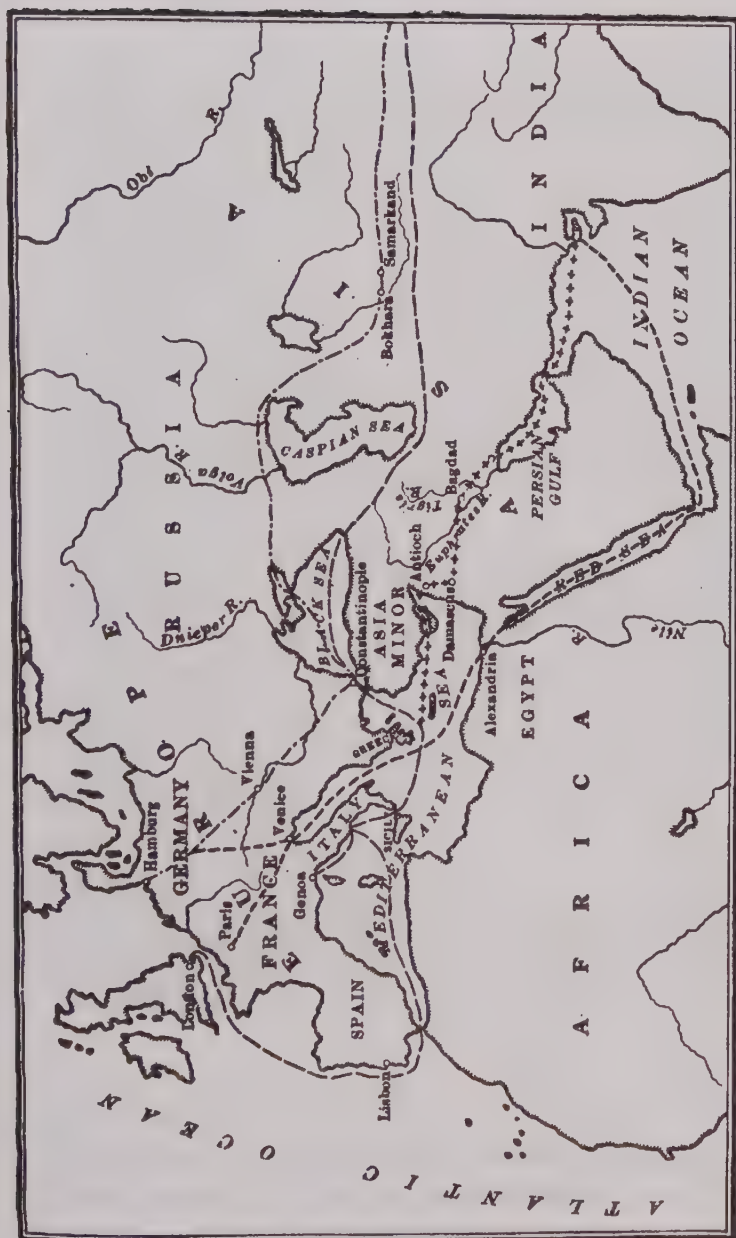
### THE DISCOVERY BY MAGELLAN

#### VOYAGES OF DISCOVERY BY EUROPEANS

**The trade between Europe and Asia.** We do not know when the people of Europe began to trade with the people of Asia. Many centuries ago there were routes of trade between the two continents. But the traders of Europe did not go to the East. They bought their merchandise from other traders who had come from farther east. These traders had in the same way bought the merchandise from other traders who had come from still farther east. So for centuries the European merchants knew little or nothing of Asia.

There were three trade routes between the West and the East. One of them passed through the northern part of the Black Sea and along the northern shore of the Caspian Sea. It continued through Turkestan, touching the cities of Bokhara and Samarkand. From there it ran eastward across Asia, and entered the great kingdom of China from the north. Another route passed through Syria and Mesopotamia, and continuing to the Indian Ocean, reached India from the sea. The third route started from Egypt. It passed through the Red Sea and followed the coast of Arabia to India.

**Increase of trade.** In the eleventh century the Seljukian Turks conquered the Holy Land and took the city of Jerusalem. These Turks were Mohammedans, and illtreated



ROUTES OF TRADE TO THE FAR EAST

those who believed in Christ. During the next two centuries the Christian nations of Europe gathered soldiers from time to time and sent them to fight the Turks. These expeditions were called crusades.

In these crusades thousands of European soldiers went to the Holy Land. There they saw the luxurious life of the East. The people wore silk clothes and costly gems. They used sugar, pepper, and spices. They had rugs and tapestries. The crusaders learned to like these things, and when they went back to Europe, they did not wish to be without them. Thus the trade between Europe and Asia was increased.

**The need of a new trade route.** The crusades checked the Turkish conquests for a short time only. Early in the fourteenth century the Ottoman Turks established themselves in Asia Minor. Before the middle of the next century they extended their dominion not only to the east and the south, but to the west, into Europe. In the year 1453 they took Constantinople. The fall of this city closed the two northern trade routes to European trade. There was only one route left, the southern route, by way of Egypt and the Red Sea. But the city of Venice had long controlled this route, and would now control all the trade from the East. Of course the other traders of Europe did not like this, and began to look for a new route.

**The Portuguese navigators.** The desire to find a new route to the East sent many navigators exploring in unknown seas. The Portuguese and the Italians were the greatest navigators of this period. Prince Henry of Portugal was called the Navigator, because he did so much to encourage navigation and exploration. Under his direction expeditions



CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS

ere sent along the western coast of Africa. Two Italian sailors from Genoa discovered the Cape Verde Islands. The Cape of Good Hope was reached for the first time in the year 1486, by Bartholomeu Dias, a Portuguese. At last, in 1498, another Portuguese navigator, Vasco da Gama,

sailed round the cape and reached India. In this way a new route to the East was found.

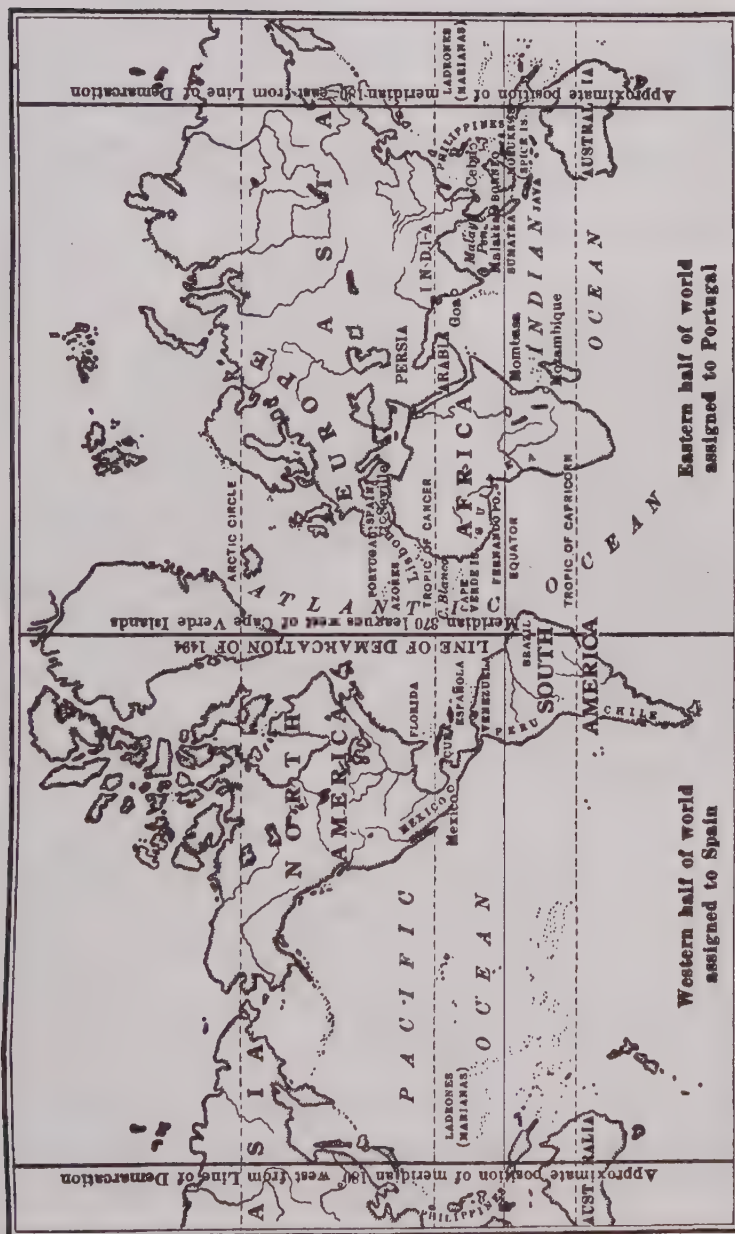
**The voyage of Columbus.** While the Portuguese were exploring the coast of Africa, other sailors were also trying to find a way to India. One of these was Christopher Columbus, a Genoese. Columbus believed that the earth was round, and that by sailing west he could reach the countries east of Europe. He wished to find a new route to India by going westward, instead of eastward, as other navigators were doing. At that time nobody knew there were two great continents west of Europe, and beyond these a great ocean. Consequently Columbus made a mistake in calculating the distance to India. He thought the earth much smaller than it really is.

**The discovery of America.** Queen Isabella of Spain gave Columbus money and three ships for his voyage. With these small ships he set sail on the third of August, 1492, from the Spanish town of Palos. During his voyage across the Atlantic Ocean he had to overcome many difficulties with his sailors, who wished to turn back. On the twelfth of October he reached land. He thought the land was the East Indies, and the people whom he found there he called Indians. The great navigator lived to make three more voyages to what he believed was the coast of Asia. But he died without knowing that he had found a new world.

#### RIVALRY BETWEEN PORTUGAL AND SPAIN

**The Line of Demarcation.** At the time when America was discovered, Portugal and Spain were rival nations. Each country wished to possess the newly discovered lands. Indeed, they quarreled over the possession of lands yet





THE NEW WORLD AND THE INDIES AS DIVIDED BETWEEN SPAIN AND PORTUGAL

undiscovered. To put an end to the quarrel, Pope Alexander VI divided the world between Spain and Portugal by drawing a line from the north pole to the south pole through the Atlantic Ocean. This line, called the Line of Demarcation, was established in the year 1493. It lay one hundred leagues

west of the Azores. All lands discovered east of this line were to belong to Portugal; all lands discovered west of it were to belong to Spain.

*The Treaty of Tordesillas.*

The king of Portugal was dissatisfied with this Line of Demarcation, and protested against it. To settle the question, representatives of the kings of Spain and Portugal met in Tordesillas, in 1494, and agreed to new terms. These terms fixed the Line of Demarcation at three hundred and seventy leagues west of the Cape Verde Islands.

All lands discovered east of this line were to belong to Portugal; all lands discovered west of it were to belong to Spain.

**Ferdinand Magellan.** About twelve years before Columbus discovered America, a boy named Ferdinand Magellan was born in the little town of Sabrosa, in Portugal. The father belonged to the fourth order of Portuguese nobility, and the boy was brought up as a page in the court of the queen.



FERDINAND MAGELLAN, WHO DISCOVERED THE PHILIPPINES IN 1521



MAP SHOWING VOYAGES OF DISCOVERY IN THE FIFTEENTH AND SIXTEENTH CENTURIES, INCLUDING THE VOYAGE OF MAGELLAN

There he learned astronomy and navigation. He went to India as a soldier. While in the East, he was sent on various expeditions to Sofala, Malakka, Java, and the Molukkas. He was a good soldier, and was made captain.

*Magellan's change of allegiance.* Ferdinand Magellan was a brave man. He fought in many battles for his king and exposed himself to danger again and again to prove his loyalty. But he had many enemies, who tried to discredit him with the king. They were successful at last, and Magellan lost the royal favor. Consequently he left Portugal and went to Spain, where he became a subject of Charles V. Early in his service to his new king he asked for a commission to try to find another route to the Indies by sailing west.

**The Molukkas, or Spice Islands.** In 1512, fourteen years after their discovery of the new route to India, the Portuguese discovered the Molukkas, or Spice Islands, the much-desired land of pepper, cinnamon, and cloves. But at this time nobody knew the exact location of these islands. The Portuguese navigators had found them by sailing east. Magellan believed that he could reach them by sailing west. He thought these islands were so far to the east that they were really on the western side of the Line of Demarcation, and belonged to Spain; if this was so, the western route ought to be shorter than the eastern route.

#### THE VOYAGE OF MAGELLAN

**Magellan in search of the western route.** With the help of his friends Magellan succeeded in laying his plan before the king. He proposed to sail westward. When he reached America, he would go south until he found a passage to the west. This passage would lead him to the Indies.





THE GOLDEN TOWER, IN SEVILLE, THE STARTING POINT OF MAGELLAN

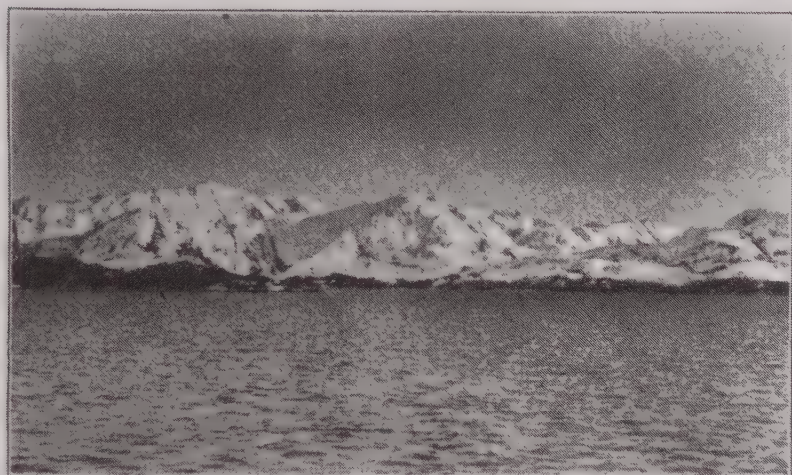


At first the king would not listen to him. But several influential men supported the daring explorer. They believed that he was right. Among these men were the bishop of Burgos, the astronomer Ruy Faleiro, and the wealthy merchant Christopher de Haro. After much persuasion the king accepted the proposition. He agreed to furnish the necessary money, ships, and men. Ferdinand Magellan and Ruy Faleiro were made joint captains of the expedition, and were to share in the profits. They were also to receive, for themselves and their heirs, the government of any lands they might discover, with the title of *adelantados*.

**The fleet.** Everything was made ready for the voyage, and the order was issued at Barcelona for the departure of the expedition. Faleiro had finally decided not to go, and Magellan was in sole command. He had five ships, the *Trinidad*, the *Vittoria*, the *San Antonio*, the *Concepción*, and the *Santiago*. (His flagship was the *Trinidad*. He had about two hundred and seventy men. Thirty-seven of these were Portuguese; about thirty were Italians; nineteen were Frenchmen; most of the others were Spaniards.

**The trip to Port Saint Julian.** With his five vessels Magellan sailed from the city of Seville on the tenth of August, 1519. His course lay by the Canary Islands, where he stopped for a few days. On the twenty-ninth of November he reached South America, and turned southward. In February, 1520, he came to the mouth of the Rio de la Plata, which he entered and explored. Some of his men thought that at last a westward passage was found, but they were disappointed. The crew were getting disheartened, but Magellan's courage never faltered; he bravely kept on sailing to the south. In March he arrived at Port Saint Julian.

**The mutiny.** At Port Saint Julian he had serious trouble with his crew. There were several men who were jealous of him and tried to break up the expedition. These men told the sailors that if they went farther to the south, they would soon have no food; that it was impossible to go far



SNOW-COVERED MOUNTAINS ALONG THE SHORE OF THE STRAIT OF  
MAGELLAN

south on account of the cold climate; and that there was no hope of finding a passage to the west. Many of the sailors believed this and mutinied.

But Magellan was not afraid. He told his men that he was going to continue the voyage to the south till he reached the end of South America or found a strait. He suppressed the mutiny and ordered some of the leaders to be executed.

**The discovery of the strait.** Magellan was so long delayed by the difficulties with his crew that he did not leave Port Saint Julian until late in August, 1520. Near Cape Santa Cruz the ship *Santiago* was wrecked. This made the sailors

more discouraged than ever, but Magellan continued sailing southward. At last, late in October, he found the opening he was looking for. A cape at the entrance he called the Cape of the Eleven Thousand Virgins. On entering the passage he found it to be long and wide. To the south,



ROUTE OF MAGELLAN'S FLEET IN THE PHILIPPINES

at his left, lay an island inhabited by savages. He called the island *Tierra del Fuego*, because of the many lights on the shore. It took him more than a month to make his way through the strait. He called the strait *All the Saints*, but it now bears his own name, in honor of his discovery. He completed his passage through the strait on the twenty-eighth day of November. He and his men had suffered much; the ship *San Antonio* had deserted.

**The Pacific.** Magellan now began the long voyage across the ocean. His voyage was so smooth and peaceful that he called the body of water the Pacific.

We must not think Magellan knew that the Pacific was a great ocean. He supposed that by sailing to the north he should soon come to the Indies. So he turned his ships first in that direction and then toward the west. He expected every day to find the Spice Islands; but he sailed on and on without arriving at the desired land. The scurvy broke out among his crew, because of bad and insufficient food. They suffered terribly from this disease, and twenty of them died. But in spite of these hardships the brave commander kept his face westward. For more than three months he saw no land except two small uninhabited islands, which had neither food nor fresh water. In his disappointment he called these islands the Unfortunates.

**The Ladrões.** Early in March, 1521, he touched at several small inhabited islands. The natives came out in their little boats, and Magellan was able to obtain supplies of food and water. There were so many small sailboats in the harbor that Magellan called the islands the Isles of Sails; but the natives stole one of his boats, and he changed the name to the Ladrões, or Islands of Thieves.

#### MAGELLAN IN THE PHILIPPINES

**The discovery of the Philippines.** From the Ladrões Magellan continued to sail west. He was still looking for the Spice Islands. On the sixteenth of March, 1521, he sighted an island on which there were lofty mountains. He afterwards learned that this island was called Zamal; it is now called Samar. On the following day Magellan landed his worn-out



sailors on an island named Humunu or Homonhon, and had two huts built for the sick. This island was not inhabited; but some natives came from the island Suluan, in a native prau. These were the first Filipinos seen by the Spaniards.



HOUSE COVERING THE CROSS THAT MARKS THE LANDING PLACE OF  
MAGELLAN AT CEBU

*Naming the new islands.* After about eight days Magellan decided to leave the place because of the difficulty in getting food. He sailed to Limasawa, a small island south of Leyte. Here he found a prosperous Filipino village. The Filipinos were cultivating rice and breadfruit. They had coconuts, oranges, and bananas, as well as citron and ginger.



On this island Magellan found Rajah Calambu and Rajah Siagu, two Filipino chiefs from Mindanao. These Filipino chieftains were friendly to the Spaniards; they feasted them and exchanged presents.

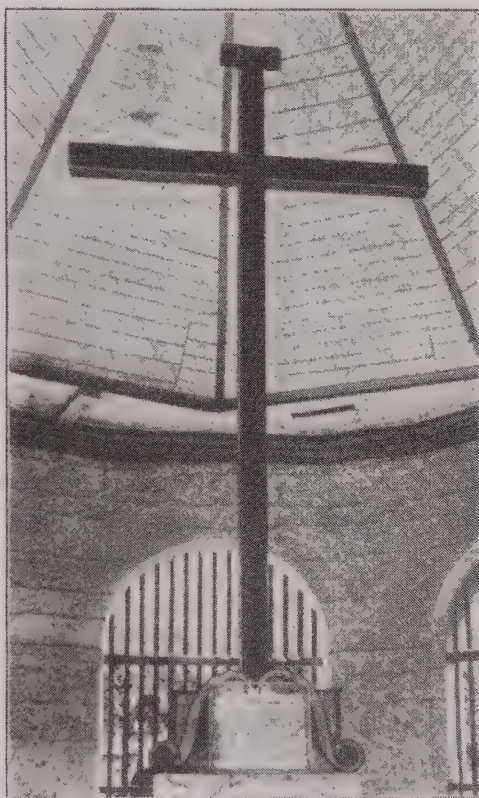
Before leaving Limasawa, Magellan had Mass celebrated, the first ever celebrated in the Philippines. He erected a cross, and took possession of the Islands for the king of Spain. He called the Islands the Archipelago of Saint Lazarus, because it was on the day of this saint that he reached these shores.

#### **Magellan in Cebu.**

From the inhabitants of Limasawa, Magellan learned of the large and rich town of Cebu. Being in great need of food, and unable to obtain a sufficient

amount on Limasawa, he was anxious to go to Cebu.

With one of the chiefs as guide, and accompanied by several Filipinos, he set sail for Cebu. This town, according to the reports of some of Magellan's men, was strongly



THE CROSS (INCASED IN WOOD) MARKING  
THE LANDING PLACE OF MAGELLAN AT  
CEBU

defended. The king was Rajah Humabon, a powerful chief who had under him as many as two thousand warriors with lances. In Cebu alone he had eight subordinate chiefs. Several of the neighboring islands belonged to him.

The Cebuans seemed to be familiar with the neighboring countries. They knew of China and of the Molukkas. This would indicate that they had commercial dealings with these countries. Several days before Magellan came to Cebu, a junk from Siam had anchored in the port. A Moro from the junk remained at Cebu to trade in gold and slaves. Brass gongs made in China were found in the town. There were other signs, too, that extensive commercial relations existed.

Rajah Humabon tried to make Magellan pay tribute. He said that it was a custom followed by all vessels entering his port. Magellan refused to pay the tribute, declaring that the king of Spain was the greatest king of all. After a time, Humabon became friendly with the newcomers and exchanged presents with them. The Spaniards were allowed to land and visit the town. Trading then began. Spanish bells, mirrors, glass beads, red caps, and other trifles were exchanged for the native rice, swine, goats, and fowls.

We should remember that the king of Spain desired Magellan to spread Christianity. Magellan, soon after landing at Cebu, had Mass celebrated. This pleased the people, and after a while they desired to be taught the newcomers' religion. Soon more than eight hundred Cebuans, including Rajah Humabon, were baptized. The queen was also baptized and received an image of the Child Jesus.

**The death of Magellan.** If you look at the map of the Philippines, you will observe that close to Cebu there is a small island called Mactan.

At the time that Magellan was in Cebu, the island of Mactan must have been a prosperous community. It had several chieftains, some of whom refused to recognize the king of Spain. Magellan burned one of the villages on this island because its inhabitants refused to obey him.

One day a friendly chief of Mactan sent one of his sons to Magellan to ask for help. This chief was called Zula. He was an enemy of Lapulapu, the chief of another village on the same island. Magellan was glad to lend aid to his new ally. With three boatloads of Spaniards and twenty boatloads of Cebuans, he started for Mactan. At dawn on the following day he led out his forces against Lapulapu. But Lapulapu's men proved to be brave and able fighters. They routed the Cebuans

and drove the Spaniards back to their boats. Magellan himself was killed. A monument marks the spot where this boldest adventurer and most daring navigator of his day fell.

**The vengeance of a slave.** After the death of Magellan, the remaining crew chose Duarte Barboza and Juan Serrano



MONUMENT TO MAGELLAN WHERE  
HE WAS KILLED ON MACTAN ISLAND



as commanders. Barboza began to treat Magellan's slave harshly. This slave was a Malay who acted as interpreter between the Spaniards and the Filipinos. To revenge himself on Barboza, he went to the king of Cebu and advised him to seize the ships of the Spaniards. A plot was laid. At a banquet twenty-three of the Spaniards, including Barboza, were killed. Juan Serrano was captured.

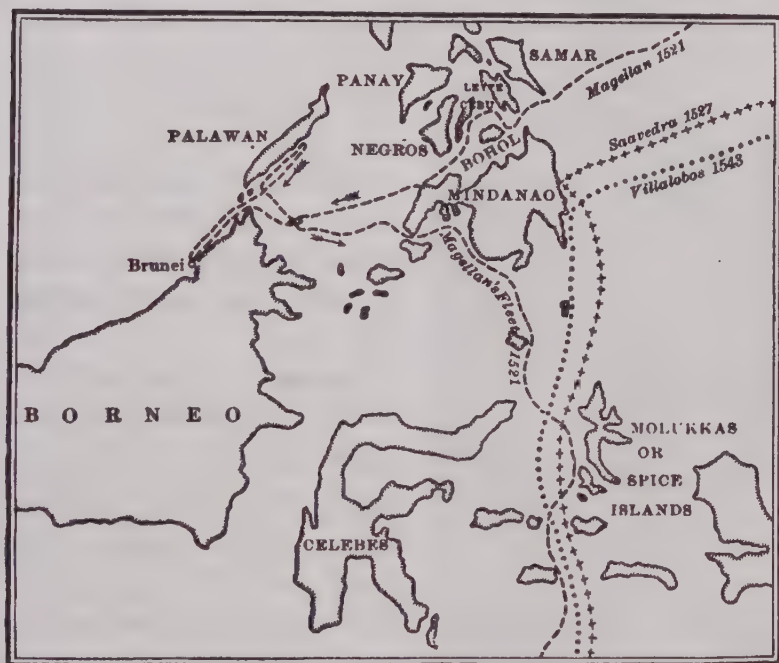
#### MAGELLAN'S SHIP THE FIRST TO SAIL ROUND THE WORLD

**The Spice Islands at last.** Let us not forget that Magellan was looking for the Spice Islands, and not for the Philippines. He was in search of a western route to the Indies. On his way he discovered the Philippines accidentally. After his death the one hundred and fifteen men left of the expedition prepared to resume the voyage. They burned the Concepción and sailed in the two remaining ships, the *Trinidad* and the *Vittoria*. They passed along the western coast of Mindanao, Cagayan Sulu, and Palawan. Still seeking for the famous Spice Islands, they were guided to the city of Brunei, on the large island of Borneo. At that time Brunei was a prosperous Mohammedan town containing more than twenty-five thousand families. The house of the king was made of stone. There was a brick fort, defended by about sixty brass and iron cannon. The town had an extensive trade in ginger, gums, camphor, and Sulu pearls.

From Borneo the two vessels sailed eastward and passed by the Sulu Archipelago. They touched again at Mindanao. Here they captured some natives, who guided them to the Spice Islands. At last, on the eighth of November, 1521, they arrived at Tidore. Once in the Molukkas, they began

to exchange presents and to trade with the natives. A rich cargo of spices, sandalwood, and gold was obtained. In Tidore a trading station was established. The native chiefs acknowledged the king of Spain and promised to obey him.

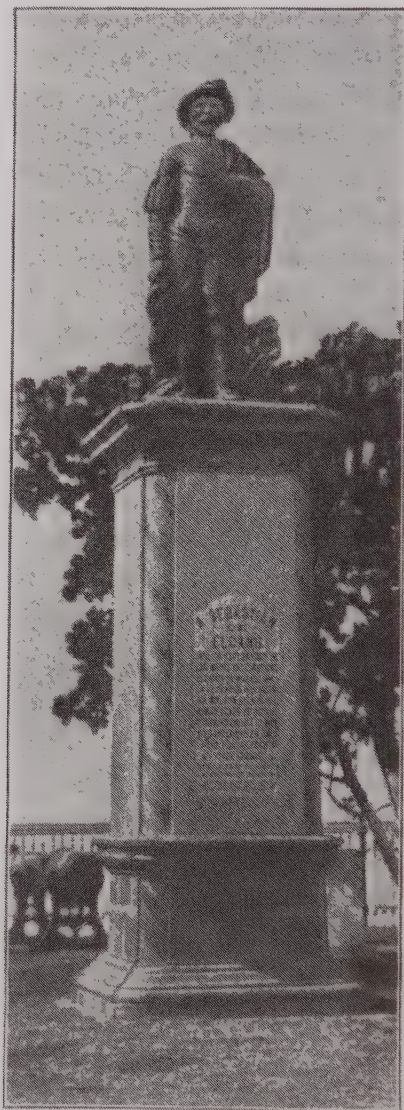
**The return trip.** It was decided to send the *Trinidad* back to Spain by way of Mexico. The *Vittoria* was to



EARLY SPANISH EXPLORATION

return by way of the Cape of Good Hope. The *Trinidad* failed to accomplish the return trip; after great hardships she fell into Portuguese hands. The *Vittoria*, under the command of Juan Sebastián del Cano, crossed the Indian Ocean and rounded the Cape of Good Hope. At the Cape Verde Islands the ship barely escaped seizure by the Portuguese. Del Cano, however, was too clever to be caught.





A STATUE TO SEBASTIÁN DEL  
CANO, THE FIRST CIRCUMNAVI-  
GATOR OF THE GLOBE

On the sixth of September, 1522, he reached Sanlúcar de Barrameda. The circumnavigation of the earth had been accomplished. The good ship *Vittoria* had circled the globe. Of the five vessels that had left Seville more than three years before, one only, the *Vittoria*, returned. Of the two hundred and seventy men who had set out on the expedition, only eighteen saw their native land again.

**Summary.** The trade between Europe and the East began many centuries ago. There were three routes of trade. Two of these were closed to Europe as a result of the Turkish domination of Constantinople. The third route was controlled by Venice. The desire of the people of Europe for the products of the East, especially for spices, led to many important discoveries. The Portuguese discovered the route to India by way of the Cape of Good

Hope. Columbus discovered America. Magellan discovered the Philippines, and proved that the East could be reached by sailing west. Magellan's voyage made it known that a great ocean lay between Asia and America. Magellan's ship accomplished the first voyage round the globe, proving the rotundity of the earth.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Trace on a large map the three early trade routes between Asia and Europe. Explain how the Turkish invasion of Europe closed two of these routes.

2. How did the crusades increase the demand of Europeans for luxuries from the East?

3. What nations tried to find other routes to India?

4. Trace the voyage of Vasco da Gama. To whom did the route belong?

5. How did America happen to be discovered? What did Columbus think the West Indies were? Why?

6. Find the Line of Demarcation on a map in this book. What was the Treaty of Tordesillas?

7. What islands did Magellan wish to reach? Why did he sail westward? Why did his expedition not stay in the Philippines?

8. Tell about some of the hardships suffered by Magellan and his men. Describe the mutiny at Port Saint Julian.

9. Magellan was born in Portugal. Why, then, did he make his voyage for the king of Spain? What was Magellan to receive from the king?

10. Tell about Magellan's voyage to the Philippines; the death of Magellan; the return trip on the Vittoria. How long was the Vittoria away from Spain?

11. Name three important results of Magellan's voyage.

12. Where was the first Mass celebrated in the Philippines? What name did Magellan give to the Philippines? Why? What island of the Philippines did Magellan see first? On what island was he killed?

13. How did the Strait of Magellan receive its name? the Pacific? the Ladrones?

14. Give the dates of the following events: the discovery of America; the discovery of the route to India by way of the Cape of Good Hope; the discovery of the Philippines.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. A comparison of the character of Columbus with that of Magellan.
2. The hardships of the early navigators.
3. The connection between spices and the voyages of discovery.
4. What Magellan saw in the Philippines.

## CHAPTER III

### EXPLORATION AND CONQUEST

#### EARLY SPANISH EXPEDITIONS TO THE PHILIPPINES

**The quarrel over the Molukkas.** The Portuguese discovered the Molukkas as early as 1512, almost ten years before the Spaniards reached them by sailing westward. According to the Treaty of Tordesillas, in 1494, the Line of Demarcation was fixed at a distance of three hundred and seventy leagues west of the Cape Verde Islands. All lands discovered east of this line were to belong to Portugal; all discovered west of it were to belong to Spain. But nobody knew whether the Molukkas were on the eastern or the western side of this line, and both Spain and Portugal claimed the islands.

To settle the dispute, the kings of Portugal and Spain tried to come to an agreement. Twice in the year 1524 their representatives met, first at Vitoria, then at Badajoz. However, nothing was accomplished in these meetings. Each country remained firm in its determination to retain control of the islands. The truth of the matter was, the Philippines and the Molukkas were both on the Portuguese side of the Line of Demarcation. But geographical knowledge at that time was not exact enough to establish this fact.

**The expedition of Loaisa.** In the autumn of 1522, soon after the Vittoria arrived at Sanlúcar, the king of Spain decided to send another expedition to the East. He put this expedition under the command of García Jofre de Loaisa.



Loaisa was captain general of the fleet and governor of the Molukkas. He sailed from Coruña, in Spain, on the twenty-fourth of July, 1525. He took with him Andrés de Urdaneta and also Sebastián del Cano, who had been in command of the *Vittoria* during the last part of her wonderful voyage. Toward the end of March, 1526, the fleet entered the Strait of Magellan. After the long voyage across the Pacific, it touched at the Ladrone Islands, and later sailed to the coast of Mindanao. In trying to visit Cebu, the fleet was driven southward to the Molukkas.

This expedition met with many misfortunes. Before reaching the Strait of Magellan, it had lost three ships. Shortly after it began the voyage across the Pacific, the commander died. Sebastián del Cano succeeded to the command, but in four days he also died. The expedition accomplished nothing at Mindanao, and later fell into the hands of the Portuguese in the Molukkas.

**The expedition of Saavedra.** In 1527 Spain sent another expedition to the East. This expedition started from the port of Zaguatenejo, in New Spain. It was the first expedition fitted out in Mexico for the Far-Eastern Islands. It was under the command of Álvaro de Saavedra.

This voyage was undertaken to find out what had become of Serrano and the other Spaniards left at Cebu in 1521. Saavedra had orders to look for the ship *Trinidad*, which del Cano had left in the Molukkas, and to find Loaisa. He was also to learn what had become of Sebastian Cabot, who had led a Spanish expedition to the Molukkas in 1526.

Saavedra arrived at the Ladrone Islands in December, 1527. He stopped in Mindanao long enough to secure a supply of food. He then continued the voyage to the



Molukkas. In Tidore he found the survivors of the Loaisa expedition. Twice he tried to return to Mexico, but did not succeed on account of the winds. Finally he surrendered to the Portuguese.

**The Line of Demarcation of 1529.** For nearly eight years both Spain and Portugal claimed the Molukkas. Finally, in 1529, by the Treaty of Saragossa, the king of Spain agreed to give up his claim to the Molukkas for the sum of three hundred and fifty thousand gold ducats. He agreed, also, to fix the Line of Demarcation at two hundred and ninety-seven and one half leagues east of the Molukkas. For about thirteen years he respected the terms of this treaty. Then he sent another expedition to the East.

**The expedition of Villalobos.** Villalobos was commanded to undertake a voyage for the discovery, conquest, and colonization of the islands and provinces of the southern sea toward the west. Ruy López de Villalobos belonged to a distinguished family, and was brother-in-law of the viceroy of Mexico. He sailed from the port of Navidad, in Mexico, on the first day of November, 1542. In February, 1543, after a pleasant voyage across the Pacific Ocean, he arrived at the eastern coast of Mindanao. From there he was driven by the monsoon to the neighboring island of Sarangani.

Villalobos's orders were to go, not to the Molukkas, but to the Western Islands, which included the Philippines. Once in the Western Islands, he was to make settlements along the seacoast. At a distance from the native dwellings he was to erect forts. He was to appoint men of good judgment to carry on the trade with the islanders and to buy the necessary supplies. He was to seek opportunities to spread

the Catholic faith. To set the natives an example, he and his men were to live as good Catholics.

*The scarcity of food.* When the expedition reached Mindanao, it was in great need of food. The natives on the little island of Sarangani were hostile. The Spaniards attacked their stronghold in the hope of getting something to eat, but obtained very little. So scarce was food that the Spaniards were forced to eat dogs and cats, gray lizards, and land crabs. They made various attempts to secure food from some of the northern islands. An expedition which they sent to Cebu for this purpose made a landing at the island of Samar.

*The renaming of the islands.* The island of Samar was at this time called Tandaya. Villalobos named it Filipina, in honor of the Spanish crown prince, Don Felipe. This was in the year 1543. Later the whole archipelago was referred to by Villalobos as Las Filipinas. Although the name Western Islands was used for many years, Las Filipinas, the name given by Villalobos, gradually replaced it. The name Archipelago of Saint Lazarus, given by Magellan long before, never came into general use.

*The failure of the expedition.* Villalobos did not succeed in establishing any settlement in the Philippines. On account of the hostility of the natives he gave up the attempt, and sailed southward to the Molukkas. Necessity finally compelled him to surrender to the Portuguese. Soon after, he fell ill and died.

The failure of Villalobos's expedition delayed the conquest and settlement of the Philippines for about twenty-three years. The task that he had undertaken required the tact and wisdom of an able man like Legaspi.

EXPEDITION OF LEGASPI AND URDANETA TO THE  
PHILIPPINES

**The colonization of the Philippines.** In 1556 Charles V abdicated. His son Philip, in whose honor these islands had been named Felipinas, succeeded him. The new king, Philip II, wished to colonize the Philippines. As early as 1559 he commanded the viceroy of Mexico to prepare a fleet for the expedition. Five years elapsed, however, before the ships were ready to sail.

*The expedition of Legaspi.* At last, on the twenty-first of November, 1564, the fleet set sail from Navidad, in Mexico. It was under the command of Miguel López de Legaspi. Andrés de Urdaneta went with the fleet as its spiritual leader and chief navigator. There were two large vessels and two small ones. In the entire crew there were three hundred and eighty persons. One hundred and fifty of these were seamen, two hundred were soldiers, and six were priests.

*Legaspi and Urdaneta.* Two able men made possible the success of this expedition. They were Miguel López de Legaspi and Andrés de Urdaneta.

Legaspi was born at Zumárraga, in Spain, in the early part of the sixteenth century. He belonged to a noble family. In 1545 he went to Mexico. Here he was employed as chief clerk in the government of the city of Mexico. He spent a great deal of his own money in fitting out the expedition to the Philippines. He died in Manila, in 1572.

Urdaneta was a soldier priest. He was born in Villafraña, in Spain, in 1498. As a young man, he entered the military service. He was a brave and able soldier. Later he studied astronomy and navigation. He was with the expedition commanded by Loaisa, and remained in the Molukkas

till 1535. He then returned to Spain, but a few years later went to Mexico. It was in Mexico that he became a friar, entering the Augustinian order in 1552. In 1564 he joined the expedition commanded by Legaspi. He was appointed prelate of the new lands with the title of Protector of the Indians. When the expedition reached the Philippines, Legaspi sent Urdaneta to Spain, by way of Mexico, to give the king an account of what had been done in the Islands. This missionary soldier was a man of sound judgment, earnest, and true to his convictions. He died in Mexico in 1568.

*The destination of the expedition.* Legaspi was not to enter Portuguese territory, but was to conquer the Philippines. Urdaneta, however, objected to the colonization of these islands because he thought they belonged to Portugal. He advised that the expedition should go to the Philippines for no other purpose than to ransom the Spaniards left there by former expeditions. He wanted Legaspi to settle the island of New Guinea. But the Supreme Court of Mexico gave Legaspi sealed orders. It directed him to go to the Philippine Islands.

*In the Visayan Islands.* In the voyage across the Pacific Legaspi passed many small islands. Without adventure he reached the Ladrone Islands late in January, 1565. Many members of his expedition thought that these were the Philippines. He now sailed to the Philippines, and arrived at Cebu on the thirteenth of February. He found the natives hostile, and did not think it wise to land. Being in great need of food, he sailed from island to island, looking for supplies. He touched at Leyte, where he again found the natives to be unfriendly. He had the same experience at





**LEGASPI-URDANETA MONUMENT**



Mazagua and Camiguin. He started for Mindanao, but on account of bad weather got no farther than Bohol. Here he stopped for a while, because he found the people friendly. Near this island he captured a junk from Borneo. From Bohol he had one of his ships go south to explore Mindanao, and sent another back to Cebu.

*The blood compact.* In token of friendship Legaspi performed with Sicutuna, chief of Bohol, the ancient Filipino ceremony of the blood compact. Each of the chiefs entering into the compact wounded himself slightly in the arm and drew a few drops of blood, which he mixed with wine or water. Then each chief drank the blood of the other, pledging perpetual friendship.

*The council of officers.* Legaspi called a council of his officers and asked them if they thought it wise to colonize the Islands. The question was hard to decide. The priests were opposed to the colonization. Urdaneta insisted that they had no right to make any settlement in the Philippines, because these islands belonged to the king of Portugal. Most of the officers, however, were in favor of colonization. Some of them wished to plant the settlement in Cabalian, on the island of Samar. It was finally decided to colonize Cebu.

#### THE FIRST SPANISH SETTLEMENT

**The first Spanish settlement.** The expedition now sailed back to Cebu, arriving there on the twenty-seventh of April, 1565. The island of Cebu was well populated. There were fourteen or fifteen villages along the seacoast. Since the inhabitants continued to be hostile, Legaspi took the town of Cebu by assault. About one hundred houses were burned, and the people fled to the mountains.

Buildings were soon begun. A place was set aside for the church. Sites for Spanish houses were selected. Wells were dug. The village was planned in the shape of a triangle. The two sides facing the sea were defended by artillery. On the land side a palisade was raised. This was the first Spanish settlement in the Philippines. Legaspi called it the settlement of San Miguel. Later the town was named the City of the Most Holy Name of Jesus, in honor of an image of the Child Jesus which a soldier had found in one of the houses.

**Legaspi's peace policy.** Legaspi was a kind and just man. He desired to be a friend to the Cebuans. He said that he wished to be a father to them and their children. He persuaded them to remain in their villages as friendly neighbors. This policy of Legaspi soon won the good will of many of the Filipinos, and by and by a treaty of peace was made with King Tupas, of Cebu. Those who had fled to the mountains returned. The Cebuans admitted the authority of the king of Spain, and agreed to pay tribute after the harvests were reaped. Food was to be sold at a fair price. Spanish and Filipino criminals were to be arrested and punished. The two peoples were to help each other in time of war, and were to divide the spoils between them.

**Early difficulties.** But in spite of the treaty the Cebuans were not very friendly to the Spaniards. They did not trust them, because some drunken Spanish soldiers opened the graves of the natives at night and stole jewels and trinkets. But most of all they disliked to submit to Spanish authority. They did so only because the Spaniards were more powerful than they. They objected to paying the tribute. To be free from Spanish authority, many of the natives fled from Cebu.

This antagonism of the Filipinos was not Legaspi's only difficulty. The Spaniards had much trouble in securing food supplies. Expeditions seeking for food were sent to Panay, Leyte, and Negros, and even to the distant town of Butuan, in Mindanao.

In addition to the trouble with the Filipinos and the shortage of food, there were among the soldiers of Legaspi some few who conspired against him. A Venetian and a Frenchman plotted to seize one of the vessels and leave the Philippines. One of the men betrayed the secret. Another group of plotters intended to capture a boat from the Moro traders of Luzon and escape to the Molukkas. This plot was betrayed by a Frenchman. A third conspiracy was headed by a Portuguese. These things show that Legaspi had much to overcome to make his first settlement in the Philippines successful.

**Legaspi removes to Panay.** Hardly had Legaspi thought himself secure in Cebu, when the Portuguese appeared and began to attack him. On account of the scarcity of food there and the menace of the Portuguese, he decided to establish himself elsewhere. He chose the island of Panay as the place for the new settlement; for on that island there was little danger of famine, because plenty of rice could be had. Besides, if the Portuguese should attempt to attack him again, he could sail up the river and escape into the interior. So he removed to the bank of the Panay River.

**Orders from Spain.** Soon after Legaspi arrived in the Philippines, he sent one of the ships back to Mexico. This vessel carried about two hundred men, including Urdaneta. They made the return voyage by a route farther north than the one they had followed in coming from Mexico. It was a

better return route ; for the winds were more favorable, and the danger from attack by the Portuguese was less. This vessel carried Legaspi's first report. In reply to this report the king ordered him to take possession of the Islands for Spain. Encomiendas were to be given to the soldiers. Legaspi was appointed adelantado and governor. Soon after receiving these orders Governor Legaspi went to Cebu and organized a city government there. Guido de Lavezaris was appointed governor of the new city.

**The early conquests.** By the middle of the year 1570 the Spaniards were somewhat familiar with the islands in the middle part of the Archipelago. Their authority was felt in several places. In 1569 they had discovered the islands of Masbate, Burias, and Ticao. About the same time they visited Albay, in Luzon. Salcedo, the young and valiant grandson of Legaspi, reduced the islands of Ilim and Lubang. On Lubang the Spaniards found two forts defended by small cannon. The rich town of Mamburao, in Mindoro, they captured and plundered.

#### THE FOUNDING OF MANILA AND THE CONQUEST OF LUZON

**The first expedition to Manila.** Legaspi heard that there was an important and prosperous Moro settlement in Luzon called "Maynila." The people of Panay were not friendly to Legaspi and his men. Often they refused to plant their fields, in the hope of starving the Spaniards. For this reason Legaspi decided to send an expedition to Manila. He ordered Martín de Goiti, his field marshal, to conduct an exploring expedition to the Moro settlement in Luzon. Goiti sailed with one hundred and ten Spanish soldiers and



sailors and five or six hundred Visayans. He stopped for a short time in Mindoro, where he had a fight with the Chinese traders. Then he proceeded to Luzon. After exploring the Pansipit River, he anchored at Cavite and sent a message to Rajah Soliman, the king of Manila.

*Goiti and Soliman.* Manila was situated on the southern bank of the river Pasig. It was a Moro city protected by a heavy palisade. Small cannon stood at the gates. Within the palisade were many armed warriors. Such was the city of Rajah Soliman.

In answer to Goiti's message Rajah Soliman agreed to meet him on the shore. Goiti landed with his soldiers. Soliman was accompanied by his uncle, Chief Laya. The proud Filipino king said that he was willing to be a friend to the Spaniards, but that they must not abuse his people. Friendship having been promised on both sides, Goiti and Soliman embraced each other.

*Goiti captures Manila.* Such a friendship could not last long. By friendship the Spaniards meant the recognition of Spanish authority by the natives and the payment of tribute. But the Filipinos did not want to pay tribute. They acknowledged Spanish authority and agreed to pay tribute simply because the Spaniards were more powerful than they. This condition meant friction and fighting between the two peoples.

In Manila the Filipinos were determined to hold their city. Finally, one morning in June, 1570, the inevitable moment came. Goiti fired a cannon to recall a prau that he had sent on an errand. The Filipinos thought the Spaniards had fired at the fort. The fighting began. Goiti carried the town by assault and captured the cannon. The houses





LOOKING ACROSS MANILA BAY FROM THE MOUTH OF THE PASIG RIVER

were burned. About one hundred Filipinos were killed and eighty taken captive. Among the dead was found the body of a Portuguese artilleryman.

Goiti took possession of Manila in the name of the king of Spain. Then he sailed back to Panay, to avoid the monsoons and the coming rainy season.

**The second expedition to Manila.** The next spring the Spaniards returned to Manila. This time Legaspi himself commanded the expedition. When the Filipinos found that the Spaniards had returned, they set fire to Manila and went to the neighboring town of Tondo.

*Rajah Lakandola.* Of all the Filipino chiefs Lakandola was most respected by the Spaniards. He was the king of the important town of Tondo. He was said to be one of the three grandchildren of Prince Lontok and Kalangitan, the Lady of Pasig. One of his aunts married Balagtas, who was a son of the ruler of the kingdom of Sapa; the son of a granduncle was one of the founders of Ternate. Such was the noble and ancient lineage of the man whom Legaspi found ruling in Tondo.

*The second conquest of Manila.* At first Lakandola received the Spaniards in a friendly manner. He made excuses for Rajah Soliman and Chief Laya. Legaspi promised forgiveness. But later it became clear that the Filipino chiefs did not mean to give up their authority without a struggle. On the north shore of Manila Bay they were gathering boats of war. With aid from the neighboring towns of Macabebe and Hagonoy they made ready to drive the Spaniards from Manila. But again the Spaniards proved to be the stronger. Rajah Soliman died defending his country. For the second time the Spaniards occupied Manila.

*The "Distinguished and Ever Loyal City."* Governor Legaspi now began rebuilding the city. He laid out streets. He reconstructed the old native fort. He established a convent and a church for the Augustinian friars. He built one hundred and fifty wooden houses for the Spaniards, and a palace for the governor. He so transformed Manila that he called it the Distinguished and Ever Loyal City, and made it the capital of the Archipelago. He reorganized the city government, and appointed two judges, twelve aldermen, and several other officers.

**The death of the adelantado.** Governor Legaspi labored for the rapid conquest of the Islands. To the end he was loyal to his king. It was due to his energy and tact that the Islands were finally conquered and colonized. At last, worn out by his toil, he died peacefully on the twentieth of August, 1572.

**The conquest of Luzon.** Manila and some of the neighboring towns had been brought under the Spanish rule. But the towns at a distance refused to obey the conquerors. To subdue these places, the adelantado sent Juan Salcedo on an expedition of conquest. With three pieces of heavy



A PAINTING OF LEGASPI IN THE  
MALACANAN PALACE AT MANILA

artillery and one hundred soldiers Salcedo soon conquered Cainta and Taytay, in Laguna. He then marched along the southern shore of Laguna de Bay and crossed the mountains to the Pacific coast. Here he found the gold mines of Paracale. He then returned to Manila.

At the same time Martín de Goiti was undertaking the conquest of the Pampanga Valley. He marched northward and brought many towns to submission. He continued his march to the Gulf of Lingayen and conquered the broad and fertile plain north of Manila Bay.

In 1572 Salcedo reduced Zambales, Pangasinan, and the Ilocos. Then he sailed round the northern coast of Luzon to the little island of Polillo. He returned to Manila by way of Laguna. He was absent from Manila a year.

In 1573 Salcedo was sent to conquer the Bicol provinces. He started from Manila in July with an army of one hundred and twenty soldiers. His experience had taught him how to fight the Filipinos. He soon brought Camarines, Albay, and Catanduanes under Spanish authority.

**The death of Salcedo.** Salcedo, like his grandfather, the adelantado, was an energetic man, and served his king faithfully. Like his grandfather, too, he found a grave in the land he had conquered for his king. While in Vigan, in 1576, he contracted a fever. After a short illness the brilliant young commander died at the early age of twenty-seven years.

**The extent of the Spanish power.** At the time of the death of Salcedo, Spain had conquered about as much of the Philippine Islands as she was ever to conquer. By the beginning of the seventeenth century Spanish conquest and settlement had extended along the coasts and up the river



valleys of Luzon and the Visayan Islands. Practically all of Luzon, except the mountain provinces and the eastern coast, had been explored, and most of the Visayas, except the interior of Panay, Negros, Cebu, and Samar. In Mindanao a short section of the northern coast had been settled. Many of these regions, however, never really came under Spanish authority. During the seventeenth, eighteenth, and nineteenth centuries Spain was destined to add nothing more of importance to her dominion in the Philippines.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. What were the purposes of the early Spanish expeditions to the Philippines? Name three of the expeditions. From what country did the last two sail?

2. How did the expedition of Villalobos differ from the others? How successful was each of these three expeditions?

3. What was Legaspi told to do in the Philippines? Trace on a map the route of his expedition. Give three instances when he used tact and good judgment in dealing with the inhabitants.

4. For what reasons did he transfer his camp to Panay? Why did he later transfer it to Manila? What did he do toward making this camp permanent?

5. How do you account for the soldier's finding the image of the Child Jesus?

6. Tell about the Line of Demarcation of 1529; the renaming of the Philippines; the appointment of Legaspi as adelantado and governor; the capture of Manila; the extension of Spanish power in the Philippines by Legaspi, Goiti, and Salcedo.

7. Tell what you can about the following men: Legaspi, Urdaneta, Goiti, Rajah Soliman, Rajah Lakandola, Salcedo.

8. Give the dates of the following events: the landing of Legaspi in Cebu; the formation of the Spanish city of Manila; the death of Legaspi.



**TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION**

1. Why Urdaneta opposed the colonization of the Philippines by Spain.
2. The difficulties of Legaspi at Cebu.
3. The attitude of the Filipinos toward the Spaniards.
4. A comparison of Magellan and Legaspi.

## CHAPTER IV

### FILIPINO LIFE AT THE TIME OF THE CONQUEST

#### THE PEOPLE

**Early population.** It is difficult to estimate the population of the Philippines at the time of the arrival of the Spaniards. It is believed that when Magellan discovered the Islands, in 1521, there were only about five hundred thousand inhabitants. In 1591 the Spanish estimated the population to be about six hundred and sixty-seven thousand. Laguna, the Bicol region, and the Ilocos provinces were the most thickly populated parts.

**The classes of people.** In early times there were four classes of people in the Philippines, namely, the chiefs, the freemen, the serfs, and the slaves. The chiefs formed the ruling class, the freemen formed the privileged class, the serfs formed the laboring class, and the slaves formed the lowest class.

*The chief, or dato.* The chief was generally called the dato or rajah. His rank was usually inherited. But a man might become a dato or a rajah because of his wealth, bravery, or integrity and uprightness. The dato was obeyed by all. He ruled his people in time of peace, and led them in time of war. He acted as judge in their disputes, and protected them from their enemies.

*The freemen.* The freemen were a privileged class. They constituted a group of independent landowners. They ranked next to the chiefs. Some of the freemen were distant

relatives of the datos. Serfs could better their condition, gain their liberty, and become freemen. The freemen paid the dato no tribute, but rendered to him without pay such services as rowing his boats, helping him to build his house, and reaping his harvest. They accompanied him on his journeys, and in times of war fought under his leadership. They owned lands, houses, and slaves. This class of people were known as the maharlikas or the timawas.

*The serfs.* Below the freemen were the serfs. They were called by the Tagalogs the aliping namamahay. They could own property. They had their own houses. They could marry at will. But they were attached to some man or master, whom they must serve for at least a part of their time. Thus they helped him in sowing and harvesting, in building a house, and in rowing. They attended to his fish traps and served his guests. Indeed, they did anything that he ordered them to do. Their children were born serfs.

*The slaves.* Below the serfs were the slaves. There were several different causes of slavery. The children of slave parents were born slaves. A man who failed to pay his debts generally became the slave of his creditor. Captives often became the slaves of their creditors, or were sold into slavery by them. Sometimes a criminal who was sentenced to die was pardoned and made a slave.

The Tagalogs called the slaves the aliping saguiguild. The slaves lived in their master's house, because they had no houses of their own. They worked for him without any pay. They were owned by him, and could be sold if he wished to sell them. But they were kindly treated. Often they had little to do. It was not uncommon for a master to treat his slaves as if they were members of his family.

## GOVERNMENT

**The government.** The Spaniards did not find the people of the Philippine Archipelago united under one government. Each locality was ruled by its own chief or headman. To-day the Islands have provincial governments and municipal governments; but all these governments obey the superior government in Manila. No such arrangement existed in the early times.

*The barangay.* The unit of government of the Filipinos in early times was the barangay. Originally the word *barangay* meant a boat. Later it was also used of the settlement made by the people who came to the Islands in that kind of boat. The early settlements were usually made along the seacoasts and rivers. They consisted of from thirty to one hundred families. Freemen, serfs, and slaves, ruled by one or more datos, lived in these barangays.

*The village.* The barangays were often located near each other. This was done for protection and mutual help. Such a group of barangays formed a village. Sometimes a whole village was under the rule of one chief or rajah. The other headmen still ruled over their barangays, but obeyed the superior chief. There was no superior chief in a village unless one of the datos became very powerful. The other datos then yielded to him a part of their authority. Sometimes the superior chief ruled several villages or even a whole island. More often, however, the different headmen retained their full authority.

**Wars.** The people of a barangay or village obeyed their dato or superior chief only. The people of the neighboring settlements were really foreigners to them. There might be

friendship between them, and often such friendship existed ; but there might also be war between them. Petty wars occurred frequently ; for even a quarrel between two persons often became a cause of war. There were certain acts, however, which were regarded as being just causes for making war. These recognized just causes were the killing of a



PIGAPETTA WROTE THAT THE FILIPINOS RAISED COCONUTS AND MADE COCONUT OIL, VINEGAR, AND WINE

Reproduction permitted with due acknowledgment to Bureau of Agriculture, P. I.

person from another village, the stealing of a man's wife, and the bad treatment of a friendly trader.

**The early laws.** How was peace preserved within the barangay or within the village? By laws which the early Filipinos obeyed. Some of these laws were merely customs ; others were orders issued by the dato or the superior chief. A Visayan tradition tells us that the earliest laws were made



by a woman called Lubluban. This female lawgiver was believed to be a granddaughter of the first man and woman, whose names were Sicalac and Sicavay.

*The observance of customs.* Most of the laws of the early Filipinos were merely the customs of their forefathers. These customs were handed down orally from generation to



A KAINGIN, OR MOUNTAIN-SIDE CLEARING, MADE BY CUTTING DOWN ALL VEGETATION EXCEPT THE LARGE TREES AND THEN BURNING

generation. They were followed without question. If a man did anything against them, he was punished. These customs, therefore, had the force of laws.

*The written law.* Besides these customs there were also laws made by the dato or the superior chief. They were made by the superior chief in his own house in the presence of the other chiefs, whom he had called together. When the village chiefs had approved the new laws, the village umalahocan, or crier, went and told the people about them.

He carried a bell with him to attract the attention of everybody. After this announcement by the crier, the new laws were in force. Sometimes the laws were arranged and written in the form of codes. In 1433, almost ninety years before the Spaniards discovered the Philippines, Calantiao, a chief of Panay, issued such a code.

*The judges.* Ordinary disputes within a barangay were generally settled by the dato. Sometimes the dato was assisted by several old men who knew the laws well. If the persons in dispute were not satisfied, the dato of a neighboring barangay might be asked to act as judge. This might also be done if the dispute was an important one. If the chiefs themselves quarreled, several datos might act as a board of judges.

*The taking of oath.* A witness could not give testimony until he took oath before the judge. He swore by the crocodile, the sun, the moon, the lightning, and by many other objects of worship. The oath was, "May the crocodile eat me," "May the lightning strike me," or "May I die."

*Crimes and penalties.* Many acts were punishable. Killing or attacking a man was considered a serious offense, especially if the man killed or attacked was a chief. An insult to a woman or a headman was a punishable offense. Adultery, robbery, and the violation of sepulchers were crimes. To treat sacred places and objects of worship with disrespect was against the law.

There were many ways of punishing, some of which were cruel. The most common forms of punishment were fines, slavery, flogging, mutilation, and death.



GATHERING RICE FROM IRRIGATED FIELDS

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY, AND COMMERCE

**Land ownership.** There were two kinds of land holdings, private and public. A dato or a freeman could own land and transmit it to his children. Among the Tagalogs of Luzon the irrigated land was portioned out to the members of the barangay; but some of the mountain sides, called the tingues, were owned by the whole barangay.

*The cultivation of the land.* The soil was cleared and cultivated. The most common products were rice, coconuts, hemp, sugar cane, camotes, and cotton. There were fruits also, such as bananas, oranges, and lemons. A Spaniard describes the method of planting rice in 1576 as follows:

They put a basketful of it into the river to soak. After a few days they take it from the water; what is bad and has not sprouted is thrown away. The rest is put on a bamboo mat and covered with earth, and placed where it is kept moist by water. After the sprouting grains have germinated sufficiently, they are transplanted one by one, as lettuce is cultivated in Spain.

The Spaniards found the Filipinos breeding domestic animals, such as swine, goats, and buffaloes, as well as ducks, geese, and other fowls.

**The early industries.** The most important industries on the Islands at the time of the conquest were weaving and metal working. Oil, vinegar, and wine were made for home use. There were skillful carpenters and shipbuilders.

As early as the thirteenth century the Chinese came to the Philippines to trade. These traders obtained cotton and yuta cloth. Yuta cloth was probably made of abaca. Some of the Philippine woven cloth had colored stripes similar to that now made in Panay.



There were many fishponds. These were usually owned by the datos. But everybody had the right to fish in the rivers, creeks, and lakes. The Filipinos had many ways of



A MORO WOMAN WEAVING ON A PHILIPPINE LOOM

fishing. They used hooks, rattan corrals, and many kinds of fish nets. Some fishermen used the salambao also.

With an abundance of gold and other metals the Filipinos had learned to be miners and metal workers. In Camarines there were gold mines at Paracale and Mambulao. There were also gold mines in Balatao, Dingras, and Alingay, in



Ilocos. The Filipinos worked these mines. They were also excellent goldsmiths and silversmiths, and the Spaniards found them using various gold ornaments and trinkets as earrings and bracelets.

**The early trade.** The early Filipinos engaged not only in agriculture and other industrial occupations, but in trading. The most common method of trading was by barter, that is, by exchanging one article for another. If a rice planter wished to buy a piece of cloth, he went to the weaver and gave him rice in exchange for the cloth. There was no money. Sometimes, however, Chinese bells or pieces of gold were used as means of exchange.

For weights and measures they used wooden balances suspended at the middle by a cord. At one end of the balance they put a piece of lead, which served as the weight. At the other end they suspended the thing to be weighed. They had several weights resembling the Spanish quarter libras, third libras, and libras.

*The means of transportation.* Goods were usually carried from place to place in boats. The early Filipinos were a seafaring people. They established their settlements along the coasts and on the banks of the rivers. Having no good roads, they used boats of several kinds. For carrying merchandise they generally used large sailboats, called caracaos. They had other boats also, called lais and tapagues. In fighting they used still another kind of boat.

*Trade with other countries.* The Filipinos traded with foreign peoples. Merchants from Siam, Borneo, the Molukkas, Java, and Sumatra came to the Philippines with their boats loaded with products for trade. The Hindus, the Chinese, and the Japanese came for the same purpose. Three days

before Magellan arrived at Cebu, a trading junk from Siam had anchored at that port. The commerce with Borneo and the other Malayan islands of the south appeared to be unusually prosperous. Magellan met and captured, near the island of Palawan, a prau laden with coconuts. This prau was going to Borneo.

*Chao-Ju-Kua's account.* The Filipinos traded with China as early as the middle of the thirteenth century, or earlier. Chao-Ju-Kua, a Chinese writer who lived in the thirteenth century, described the commerce between the two peoples. He said that the Chinese ships entered the harbor and stopped in front of the official's house. Then the natives went to the ships with their baskets. They obtained, without payment, whatever articles they wanted. They took these articles to the other islands to sell. Sometimes they were gone eight or nine months, but they always returned and paid their accounts. In some places, however, the Chinese traders retained one or two Filipinos as hostages until the accounts were settled.



AN OLD JAR, SUCH AS THE CHINESE HAVE BROUGHT TO THE PHILIPPINES DURING SEVERAL CENTURIES OF TRADE

*The articles of trade.* The foreign traders brought many kinds of articles to the Philippines. The Chinese brought porcelain, colored glass beads, tin, lead sinkers for nets, iron needles, black damask, and silk cloth. Traders from Borneo brought copper, dishes, bells, colored blankets from India, Chinese cooking pans, knives, and iron lances. The foreign traders took in exchange yellow wax, tortoise shell, betel nuts, pearls, sigays, gold, cotton and yuta cloth, and slaves.

#### CULTURE OF THE EARLY FILIPINOS

**Cultural conditions.** Before the Spaniards conquered the Philippine Islands, the Filipinos had come in contact with other peoples. They were familiar with the Chinese. Borneans and other Malayan traders from the south had visited the Islands. When Goiti came to Manila in 1570, he found twenty Japanese, as well as many Chinese, living with the Filipinos. This contact with other peoples taught the Filipinos many civilized ways. Their datos dressed in cotton and silk garments. Both men and women wore gold jewelry. They had necklaces, pendants, and rings for their ears and fingers. They cooked their food. They used cups, plates, and other porcelain dishes. They obtained little bells from China, which they used as musical instruments. They sometimes fought with bows and arrows, but they had daggers, knives, spears, and javelins also. They built forts, and defended them with small cannon.

*Filipino systems of writing.* The Filipinos were using systems of writing when the Spaniards reached the Islands. They wrote from the top of the page to the bottom and from left to right. They had no paper. They wrote on bamboo canes or palm leaves, and on the bark of trees. They used

[illegible]

# ALPHABETS USED BY THE FILIPINOS AT THE TIME OF THE SPANISH DISCOVERY

Mangyan  
Tagbanua  
Tagalog  
Comingtang  
Bulacan-Tondo  
Visayan  
Pampangan  
Pangasinan  
Ilocano  
Asaka  
Toba  
Bugui  
Bornean  
Javan  
Arabic  
Hebrew



a piece of pointed iron for a pen. They recorded the number of their animals, and wrote letters.

The different groups of Filipinos spoke different dialects, and used different systems of writing. The Tagalogs, for example, had twelve consonants, *b, d, g, h, k, l, m, n, p, s, t,* and *y*. They indicated vowels by accents. An accent placed over a consonant added the sound of *e* or *i*. An accent placed under a consonant added the sound of *o* or *u*. A consonant without an accent was pronounced with the added sound of *a*.

*Early literature.* Many of the natives knew how to read and write. They wrote poems and songs. The Moros have written family records telling the names of their ancestors. Calantiao, a chief of Panay, wrote a code of laws long before the Spanish conquest. Very few of these early writings, however, have come down to us. They were written on frail materials. They were often burned. Many of them were destroyed by the missionaries, who believed them to be the work of the evil spirit.

**The religious beliefs.** When the Spaniards came to the Philippines, the Filipinos were either pagans or Mohammedans. Missionaries from Borneo and other Malaysian islands had brought the Mohammedan religion to Mindanao. The Mohammedans, or Moros, as the Spaniards called them, were in the Sulu Archipelago, on the east coast of the peninsula of Zamboanga, in the valley of the Cotabato River, and round Lake Lanao. Mohammedan missionaries from Mindanao had made converts among the Visayans and in some villages in southern Luzon. Manila was decidedly a Mohammedan town.

But the greater number of the Filipinos were pagans. In religious beliefs and practices the different groups varied

greatly from each other. In general, they believed that there was a place of rest where the souls of the good went after death. They called this place Maca or Calualhatian. The souls of the bad people went to Casanaan, a place of remorse. They believed in one superior God, in several lesser gods, and in many divine agents.

*The deities.* The superior God was called Bathala, Laon, or Kabunian. The superior God was the creator of all things. He made the earth, the sky, and the seas. He was the Almighty. Under him were several lesser gods. The lesser gods had limited power only. For example, Lalahon was the goddess of fire and harvests. She lived in a volcano in Negros. Makaptan was the creator of sickness. The god of death was Sidapa. This god owned a tall tree. The length of a man's life was determined by a mark on the tree. When his height reached that mark, he died.

*Other objects of worship.* Besides the superior God and the lesser gods, the Filipinos worshiped many other things. They worshiped the spirits of their dead ancestors. They called these spirits anitos. They offered prayers to the anitos, because they believed that these spirits could plead for them before Bathala. Sometimes they made idols of the anitos.

They worshiped the heavenly bodies. They prayed to the sun, because of its beauty. They sometimes welcomed the new moon with religious festivals. They worshiped the morning star, which they called Tala. They held many other stars and the rainbow in veneration.

They worshiped certain places, animals, and objects, looking on them with awe and respect. Certain mountains, cliffs, and points of land they considered sacred. They venerated the crow and the fairy bluebird. They thought it was

sacrilegious to point at certain trees and rocks. Indeed, they worshiped any place or anything that seemed to them to be the home of an anito.

**The simbahan.** They had no special place for worship. They did not have regular churches or temples. They



Courtesy of Bureau of Science

A TINGUIAN SHRINE AT THE ENTRANCE  
TO A BARRIO

celebrated their religious festivals in the house of the dato. Sometimes the people of the entire barangay were present at these festivals. Because of the great number of people the house of the chief was usually made larger on such occasions by building temporary sheds on each side. In the middle of the house was placed a large lamp adorned with palm leaves. Some of the people brought drums, which they beat while the feast lasted. This re-

ligious festival was called pandot. The pandot sometimes lasted four days. The house of the chief where a pandot was being held was called simbahan.

**The house of the anitos.** Attached to the early Filipino's dwelling house, by means of short bridges made of cane, were small round huts. These little huts were the houses of his anitos, and contained the wooden images of these



spirits. Sometimes there were in a single hut as many as one hundred images. The Filipino's needlework was also kept in these huts.

**Priests and priestesses.** There were three kinds of priests, the sonat, the katolonan, and the pangataohan. The sonat was a sort of bishop. He ordained the priests. It was his duty to help the dying. On such occasions he predicted the salvation or the condemnation of their souls. The katalonan, who was also called babailan or bailan, was often a priestess. The pangataohan was a soothsayer, whose duty it was to predict the future.

**The sacrifice.** The Filipinos offered sacrifice for many purposes. They believed that by an offering they could win the favor of an anito or appease his anger. They made an offering, therefore, when they wished a sick person to get well, or when they planted their crops, or when they wished to go on a voyage. There were many other occasions on which they offered sacrifice.

## CUSTOMS

**Marriage customs.** Since they did not have churches or temples, the early Filipinos, when they married, did not go to church before a priest, as we do to-day. Their marriages were not performed by the regular priests.

*The betrothal.* When a young man desired to marry a young woman, he did not go and tell her that he wished to marry her. He asked a third person to see the young woman's father and arrange the marriage. When the go-between went to the girl's parents, he took with him the young man's lance. On reaching the house, he thrust the spear into the staircase. He held the spear in this position



and prayed the anitos to favor the marriage. Then he went in and talked to the young woman's parents. This custom was observed especially by the dato class.

*The marriage ceremony.* The marriage ceremony was simple. It was performed in the bridegroom's house. The bride was carried there on the shoulders of a man. When the bride reached the house, she would not ascend the stairs until the bridegroom's father gave her a gift, often a slave. After going up the stairs, she would again become bashful until another gift or slave was presented to her. She waited for other presents before sitting down, before eating, and before drinking.

While the bridegroom and the bride were drinking together, an old man rose and in a loud voice announced the marriage. A dish of uncooked rice was then brought out. An old woman came and joined the hands of the pair over the rice. Then she took the dish and threw its contents over the guests. The ceremony ended with a shout of the old woman answered by a shout of the guests.

This was the marriage ceremony observed by the upper classes. The freemen, the serfs, and the slaves had a much simpler form. Among the freemen the pair merely drank pitarrilla from the same cup. Then they gave a shout, and the ceremony was ended. The marriage ceremony of the serfs resembled that of the freemen. The slaves had little or no marriage ceremony.

*The dowry.* Before the marriage took place, the amount of the dowry that the bridegroom should give to the young woman's parents was agreed on. The dowry was called bigay-caya by the Tagalogs and bugay by the Visayans. These words mean "marriage gift." The dowry was given by the

parents of the bridegroom. Part of it went to the young woman's parents, and part to the newly married pair.

**Burial customs.** It was a general custom among the Filipinos to bury gold trinkets and ornaments with their dead. They did this because they believed that these trinkets would aid in making the soul of the departed welcome in the next world. Sometimes they practiced the cruel custom of burying living slaves with their dead chief. They used wooden coffins or biers. The Tagalogs sometimes used a boat as a coffin. They placed their dead chief in the boat, and then assigned pairs of fowls, goats, deer, and other animals to the oars.

*Mourning.* Men and women had different customs of mourning, especially among the Visayans. While the mourning lasted, the men ate very little. They ate only bananas and camotes. They touched no rice, and drank no pitarrilla. As a sign of mourning, they wore rattan bands round their arms and necks. The women fasted also. But besides the rattan bands, which they wore in the same manner as the men, they put on white robes.

*The larao.* It was the custom among the Visayans that when a chief died, everybody should mourn. A timawa went through the village to announce the death. While the mourning lasted, no colored cloth was worn. Singing in the boats returning from the sea was prohibited. People were forbidden to quarrel. Spears were carried with their points downward, and daggers with their hilts reversed. An inclosure was built round the house of the dead chief. Nobody was allowed to enter the inclosure. If a person disobeyed these rules, he was severely punished. This special mourning for a dead chief was called larao.

**Summary.** The early Filipinos lived in barangays and villages. Sometimes barangays were united under the rule of one chief. A powerful dato might even conquer a whole island. The rulers governed by means of laws. Some of the laws were merely customs. There were, however, written laws.

The early Filipinos cleared their soil and cultivated their land. They engaged in various industries. They were good miners. They had commerce with many foreign countries. The Chinese, the Japanese, the Siamese, and the Malays from the south came to trade. From these foreign traders the Filipinos obtained many articles of common use, such as dishes, silks, and implements of war.

They believed in one God, called Bathala, and in many lesser divinities. They also believed in a life after death. They had systems of writing. They wrote letters and poems, as well as records and laws. They had weights and measures. They used a calendar that was somewhat like the calendar of to-day. This was the stage of culture in which the Spaniards found the natives of the Philippine Islands.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Tell what the four classes of people in early times were. Explain the duties of each.
2. How could a freeman become a chief? Name four ways in which people became slaves.
3. Name three units of government now found in the Philippines. Tell about the two units of government in early times. Tell about the datos.
4. Explain the two kinds of laws of the early Filipinos. Tell about the judges and punishments.

## FILIPINO LIFE AT TIME OF THE CONQUEST 75

5. Tell how land was owned by the early Filipinos. Compare their crops and industries with those of to-day.

6. Why was transportation by water so important in early times? With what countries did the Filipinos trade? What were the articles of trade?

7. Tell about the religious beliefs of the early Filipinos; some of their religious customs; the marriage customs; the burial customs; the early systems of writing; the early literature.

8. How many more people are there to-day in the Philippines than at the time of Magellan?

### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. A comparison of the manner of making laws in the Philippines to-day with that of early times.

2. Why the Spaniards expected to find rich gold mines in the Philippines.

3. Trading in the Philippines in early days.

4. China and the early Filipinos.

5. Filipino culture at the time of Legaspi.



## CHAPTER V

### CHANGES INTRODUCED BY THE SPANIARDS

#### RELIGIOUS CHANGES

**Spain's desire to spread Christianity.** One of the chief reasons that Spain had for the discovery and colonization of new lands was the desire to carry the Catholic faith to distant countries. King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella, and the Spanish monarchs who followed them, were devout Catholics and earnest in their efforts to spread the Christian religion. In all the expeditions, therefore, which started to the East from Spain, and later from Mexico, the explorer and the missionary went side by side. Columbus, Magellan, Villalobos, and Legaspi were all under orders to convert the pagan dwellers of the new lands to Christianity.

**The conversion of the Filipinos.** In loyalty to the wishes of their sovereign, almost the first thing that the different Spanish explorers did on reaching the Philippines was to preach the gospel of Christ. About two weeks after discovering the island of Samar, Magellan had Mass celebrated on the little island of Limasawa, south of Leyte. In Cebu the preaching of the priests to Rajah Humabon and his followers resulted in the conversion of the chief, his wife, and many of his men. It is said that as many as eight hundred Cebuanos were baptized in a day. Later, when Spanish settlements were established by Legaspi in Cebu, Panay, and Manila, the Christianization of the Filipinos was

carried on with no less zeal. Churches were built in all the settlements, and the inhabitants were taught the doctrines of the Catholic faith.

**Christianity established.** At first the conversion of the Islanders was retarded by the lack of missionaries. In 1591 there were only one hundred and forty priests. The years that followed, however, saw other missionary priests arrive, and by the end of the sixteenth century there were more than four hundred. The unselfish devotion of these early missionaries resulted in the rapid spread of Christianity among the Filipinos. It might be said that in thirty-five years after the arrival of Legaspi in Cebu, Christianity was established in the Archipelago. In 1581 Manila was made a bishopric, and in 1598 was raised to an archbishopric. The religious aim was pursued vigorously and earnestly. In the words of an American historian, "Spanish establishments in the Philippines were a mission, and not in the proper sense of the term a colony. . . . They were an advanced outpost of Christianity."

**The abolition of slavery.** With the establishment of Christianity, the king of Spain and the head of the Catholic Church issued decrees ordering the abolition of slavery. It has already been stated that slavery existed among the Islanders before the arrival of the Spaniards. The Spaniards owned Kaffir slaves bought of the Portuguese, and Negrito slaves captured in war. Besides, they held as slaves some of the Filipinos whom they took in battle. One instance of this was in the town of Butas, where Goiti made slaves of the captured natives. When King Philip heard of these things, he issued the decree of 1589, that Filipinos born of slave parents should be set free, and that thereafter none

should be made slaves. In 1591 the Pope also forbade the Spaniards in the Islands to hold the Filipinos as slaves or to permit anybody to be held in slavery in the future.

Little attention was paid to these orders, however, and slavery was never entirely abolished in the Philippines under the Spanish régime.

### CULTURAL CHANGES

**Teaching the Filipinos.** The early missionaries not only converted the Filipinos, but taught them the use of many articles of civilized life. Before the arrival of the Spaniards, the Filipinos had a distinct culture of their own. They raised crops, wove cloth, made articles of wood and metal, and had laws and systems of writing. This culture gave way before a more highly developed culture, the civilization of Europe, which Spain sought to transplant into the Philippines. The priests taught the Filipinos how to build better houses, how to construct larger boats, how to make their farms produce better harvests, and how to lay out better roads. Different kinds of plants hitherto unknown in the Islands were introduced from Mexico. Horses were brought from China.

**The schools.** The missionaries established schools, and taught the Filipinos how to read and write the Latin alphabet. The priests learned the native dialects, and wrote books in them for the Filipinos to read and study. True, most of these books were about religion, but nevertheless they aided to a great extent in the enlightenment of the people. In these schools, also, the friars taught the boys how "to serve in the church, to sing, to play the organ, the harp, the guitar, and other instruments." Before 1590 many primary schools had



PRESENT-DAY CATHEDRAL AT CEBU



been established by Father Plasencia in the province of Laguna. In 1601 the College of San José was founded by the Jesuits in Manila.

### CHANGES IN GOVERNMENT

**The local government.** Although the religion and the culture of the early Filipinos underwent many changes, the local government was little disturbed. The barangays and villages were left as they were, but were grouped into pueblos, or towns. The *datos* kept their positions of leadership, but their power was greatly diminished. In the course of time they became known as the *cabezas de barangay*, or headmen, and were usually intrusted with the collection of tributes. The people of the village or town still obeyed and respected them, and allowed such old laws and customs to stand as did not violate the teachings of the new religion and the principles of the new civilization. Thus Spanish rule did not directly affect the more remote localities. The only Spanish influence felt in these distant places reached them through the friar curate.

**The encomiendas.** With the conquest of the Philippines by Spain went, of course, the ownership of all the land. From time to time the Spanish governor gave large grants of the land to Spanish citizens of the Islands. The Filipinos living in the villages and towns on the grants went with the land. The groups of Filipinos on a single grant usually varied from three hundred to one thousand. The grant of land and people was called the *encomienda* or *repartimiento*.

In 1570, for example, when Legaspi founded the Spanish city of Cebu, he granted to its Spanish citizens the neighboring villages as *encomiendas*. In the course of time he

gave them the adjacent islands also. A year later, when he founded the Spanish city of Manila, he granted encomiendas to its citizens in the same way. To the camp master, Martin de Goiti, he gave the valley of the Bombon River. By 1591, twenty-six years after the settlement of the Spaniards at Cebu, there were in the Philippines two hundred and sixty-seven encomiendas, of which thirty-one belonged to the king.

*The duties of the encomenderos.* The holders of the encomiendas were called encomenderos. They were supposed to take care of the inhabitants in their encomiendas and rule over them. They were to see that order was kept and that the laws were obeyed. Moreover, they were obliged to support priests for the instruction of the people, and to build churches for them.

*The tribute.* Every male in an encomienda between the ages of sixteen and sixty was obliged to pay to the encomendero an annual tribute of eight reals in silver, or the equivalent. The tribute could be paid in rice, cloth, gold dust, or other products of the locality. Frequently the amount of the tribute was arbitrarily increased by the encomenderos and collected at the point of the bayonet. The headman was made responsible for the collection of the tribute in his barangay or village. When he could not collect the amount, he was often abused and forced to pay what was lacking. Thus the tribute and the way it was collected caused a great deal of hardship among the Filipinos. The encomenderos lived in the cities or in the large towns, and did not have any first-hand knowledge of the people supposedly under their care. Consequently they had no sympathy for the poor Filipinos. They hardly ever visited the encomiendas; when they did so, they usually had no other

purpose than to collect the tribute. This was natural ; for the early Spaniards were little interested in the welfare of the Filipinos, and looked on them merely as a source of wealth. A good friar, in writing to the king regarding these abuses, said, " Here my powers fail me ; I lack the courage and I can find no words to express to Your Majesty the misfortunes, injustices, and vexations, the torments and miseries which the Indians are made to suffer in the collection of the tributes."

*Abolishment of the encomiendas.* Because of the unjust practices of the encomenderos, there arose many criticisms. The system was early seen to be the source of many evils and the cause of general discontent. The friars started a movement to change the conditions caused by the encomiendas and especially by the greed of the encomenderos. Father Rada, the provincial of the Augustinians, and later Domingo de Salazar, bishop of Manila, denounced the cruel practices. The result was that in 1574 Philip II forbade his officials to hold encomiendas, saying that such a thing appeared to him unsuitable. Governor de Sande tried to carry out the king's wish, but was unsuccessful, and the rule of the encomenderos was destined to continue for another half century.

**The enforced labor.** With Spanish sovereignty came enforced labor also. The Filipinos were forcibly employed in the cutting of timber and in mining. They were also made to work in the construction of churches and convents, in the erection of houses for the Spaniards, and in the building of ships. They were often taken away from their peaceful occupations to be set to rowing in the galleys and fragatas, which were dispatched by the officials on some

errand, or were engaged in foreign conquest. In the latter part of the sixteenth century, particularly under Governors de Sande, Ronquillo de Peñalosa, and De Vera, large numbers of Filipinos were compelled to go on expeditions of foreign conquest. These governors sent out several expeditions in attempts to conquer Jolo, Borneo, Ternate, and other islands to the south. This practice of enforced service was all the more unjust because of the meager pay, which amounted to only four reals a month. Frequently even this small sum never reached the hand of the laborer to whom it belonged.

**The early rebellions.** As a consequence of the cruelties and abuses connected with the tributes and the enforced labor, the Filipinos never became reconciled to Spanish rule. Contentment was never general. In 1585 the Pampangans plotted a rebellion.

Three years later the people who lived in the vicinity of Manila formed a conspiracy to overthrow Spanish rule. The leaders of this conspiracy were Agustin de Legaspi, Magat Salamat, and Calao, all chiefs of Tondo; Salalila, chief of Misilo; Bolingui, chief of Pandaca; Salonga, chief of Polo; Anighacon, chief of Navotas; and Taes, chief of Bulacan. These men held several secret meetings to complete their plans. They thought that it was best to try to come to an understanding with Sumaelob, chief of the Cuyo Islands, and with the king of Borneo. Their conspiracy, however, did not succeed. It was discovered by the government, and the leaders were arrested.

In 1589 the people of Cagayan and Ilocos Norte rose in revolt and killed several tax collectors.



## LATER CHANGES IN GOVERNMENT

**The provincial and municipal governments.** In the first five years of Spanish rule no definite organization of provincial governments was attempted. The administration of affairs was intrusted to the encomenderos, who were aided by the cabezas de barangay. Later, however, the division of the Archipelago into provinces was begun. Each province was administered by an alcalde mayor, who was the provincial executive, judge, military commander, and officer of finance. Before 1580 there were in all these islands not more than three or four alcaldes mayores, but during the rule of Governor Ronquillo the number was increased to fifteen. In subsequent years, as the subjugation of the more distant localities was accomplished, more provinces were formed.

After the governments of several provinces were fairly well established, the pueblos, or towns, were reorganized and municipal offices created. About the beginning of the seventeenth century, according to an early Spanish writer, Antonio de Morga, the large towns where the Spaniards resided had city governments. For example, Manila was governed by two alcaldes, twelve regidores, one alguacil mayor, and other minor officials. The cities of Nueva Segovia in northern Luzon, Cebu, Oton in Panay, Ferdinandina in Ilocos, and Caceres in Camarines were similarly governed. But the smaller towns were ruled much more simply. The important municipal officials were the gobernadorcillo, or petty governor, the constables, and the notaries. The gobernadorcillo was elected annually, if the general government so approved, by the votes of all the married natives of the locality. The town records were kept in the native dialect.

## CHANGES IN MATERIAL SURROUNDINGS

The city of **Manila**. In material things that affected the daily life of the Filipinos, the Spaniards made few changes. Most of the Spaniards lived in the large centers, such as



A SECTION OF THE SPANISH WALL BUILT TO PROTECT MANILA

Manila, Cebu, Fernandina, and Nueva Segovia, and it was only in these localities that their influence was felt directly. Of all these places perhaps Manila, the capital, underwent the most changes. The city as founded by Legaspi in 1571 differed little from the old capital of Rajah Soliman. Several Spanish residences were built, and a church and a convent for the Augustinian friars, but otherwise little was accomplished in the first years. As time went on, however, more churches and other public edifices were constructed. Large and beautiful residences of varied architectural designs

supplanted the old simple houses of the Filipinos. And finally, during the rule of Gómez Pérez Dasmariñas, the defenses of the city were improved. A strong fort, now Fort Santiago, was built, and the construction of the walls was begun.

**The effect of Spanish rule.** The Spanish occupation, if judged by the changes made in the manner of living, had little effect on the Filipinos. True, the large towns which formed the center of population were much changed by the construction of churches, convents, tribunals, Spanish houses, and plazas; but the distant barrios, where the mass of the people lived, remained practically untouched. As before the arrival of the Spaniards, the Filipinos still lived in houses made of nipa, bamboo, and wood. They still cultivated their rice fields with little change in methods or implements. They still planted coconuts, and kept domesticated animals, such as cats, dogs, chickens, and hogs. In the outlying barrios the Filipinos still used their native boats, such as praus, tapaques, and caracaos, in crossing rivers and seas. Their chief food was still rice, fish, vegetables, and meat.

In some respects the early Spanish rule had created hardships. These hardships were largely the result of the practices connected with the exaction of tribute and the enforcement of labor.

On the other hand, the spiritual life of the Filipinos was greatly changed. The old religion and culture gave way to Christianity and Western civilization. In the language of Rizal, "They gradually lost their ancient traditions, their recollections; they forgot their writings, their songs, their poetry, their laws, that they might learn by heart other doctrines, other ethics, other tastes, different from those inspired in their race by their climate and their way of thinking."



THE WALLED CITY OF MANILA, FOUNDED BY LEGASPI IN 1571

The walls surrounding the city were begun during the time of Governor Pérez Dasmariñas



**QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW**

1. Name one of the chief motives of Spanish colonization. Is this motive seen in the colonization of the Philippines by Spain?
2. Tell about the conversion of the Filipinos.
3. When and how was slavery abolished in the Philippines? Why was it abolished?
4. What other things than religion did the early missionaries teach the Filipinos?
5. Describe the encomienda. Name some of the evil practices that arose in connection with it. Why did the Filipinos dislike the tributes? the enforced labor? Describe their early attempts to overthrow Spanish authority.
6. What later changes were made in the municipal and provincial governments?
7. Tell about the effects of Spanish rule.

**TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION**

1. The type of schools the Filipinos had before the arrival of the Spaniards.
2. The character of the early missionaries.
3. The influence of the Filipino chiefs on their people.
4. Effects of Spanish rule.
5. Did Spain give her best to the Philippines?
6. The conversion of the Filipinos to Christianity.

## CHAPTER VI

### THE CHINESE IN THE PHILIPPINES

#### EARLY RELATIONS WITH THE CHINESE

**The origin of the word *sangley*.** The Chinese in the Philippines are usually known as the sangleyes. This name was given to them in the early days of Spanish rule, and it still clings to them. The story is told that the first Chinese merchants who arrived in Manila after it became a Spanish city, on being asked why they came, responded, "Shang lü," which means "merchant travelers." The Spaniards, not understanding the Chinese language, thought the words were the name of the country from which the merchants came. So from that time the Chinese have been called the sangleyes.

**Early trade relations.** For more than three centuries before the discovery of the Islands by Magellan, Chinese trading junks had been familiar visitors in Philippine waters. A Chinese geographer in the early part of the thirteenth century wrote a description of this early trade, saying that the Chinese took to these islands porcelain, trade gold, iron censers, lead, colored glass beads, and iron needles, for which they received in exchange the native products, such as yellow wax, cotton, pearls, tortoise shell, medicinal betel nuts, and yuta cloth. The Chinese in that early period did not settle in the Islands, but stayed only long enough to dispose of their merchandise. Later, however, some of them began to make their homes in Manila and intermarry with

the inhabitants. Their number steadily increased. When Legaspi came to Manila in 1571, he found one hundred and fifty Chinese living in the town.

### THE CHINESE PIRATES

**The invasion of Limahong.** Hardly had the Spaniards established themselves in Manila, when a large fleet of sixty-two Chinese warships entered the bay. This fleet was under the leadership of the noted Chinese corsair Dim Mhon, or Limahong, who had come to the Philippines to found a kingdom. His stronghold was on the island of Pehon. But on learning of the prosperous condition of Manila, he decided to subdue the city and make it the seat of his power. In his expedition were three thousand men and a large number of women, who were to form the nucleus of his new settlement.

*Salcedo's attempt to warn Manila.* Limahong's fleet attacked and captured a Spanish boat off the coast of Ilocos. A Spanish sergeant who saw the fight from the shore told Captain Salcedo, who was then in Fernandina, what had happened. Salcedo immediately dispatched a small boat to Manila to notify the authorities of the approach of the pirate. This boat was seen and attacked by Limahong off the coast of Zambales; the crew escaped, but did not reach Manila till after the first attack. Meanwhile Salcedo was hastening to the aid of the threatened city, where he arrived just before the second attack.

*The first attack.* The hostile fleet anchored near Mariveles in November, 1574. Seven hundred men in small boats under the command of Sioco, a Japanese captain under Limahong, effected a landing near Parañaque. The next morning Sioco advanced against the capital. The Spaniards

were taken by surprise. Fortunately for the safety of the city, the Chinese attacked first the house of Goiti, the camp master, thus giving the Spaniards a little time to make preparation. Goiti was killed and his wife wounded, but



A JUNK, THE TYPICAL VESSEL OF CHINA

The Chinese traders visited the Philippines as early as the thirteenth century

Manila was saved. After making a vain attempt to enter the city, the Chinese retreated and returned to their boats.

*The fortifications.* The city had neither strong walls nor moats. Its defenses were weak, consisting only of a small fort surrounded by a wooden palisade. When Governor



Lavezaris found that Limahong was a formidable enemy, and that he was likely to make another attack, he required everybody to work day and night on the fortifications. From the Pasig River to the bay he constructed a long breastwork of barrels and boxes filled with sand. Then he directed the soldiers as to their duties in the defense. Meanwhile Salcedo had arrived from Ilocos with fifty men.

*The second attack.* Limahong chided Sioco for the defeat. He paid his men and ordered them to prepare for a second assault. He made them promises of rich rewards if they captured the city. He himself conducted the second attack. The first division of his troops was to enter the city through the main street, the second was to effect an entrance from the beach, and the third was to approach the city from the river. His assault was well planned, but the Spanish soldiers fought with great bravery and forced him to retire.

*The Filipino revolt of 1574.* To compel the Filipinos to provide him with food, Lavezaris had taken two Filipino chiefs as hostages, and had threatened to kill them if the supplies were not furnished. Just before the arrival of Limahong, he put the two chiefs to death. The people were angry, and when the Chinese attacked the city, they saw their chance for revenge, and rose in rebellion. They sent messengers as far as Cavite, to rouse the people. Ten thousand Filipinos took up arms against the Spanish. But in the end they were defeated and their leaders executed.

*Limahong in Pangasinan.* After his second defeat at Manila, Limahong sailed northward. He landed in Pangasinan and tried to found a colony. He built two forts, and imprisoned several Filipino chiefs to compel the people to supply him with food.

When the Spaniards in Manila heard of this, they determined to drive the pirate away. They summoned all the Spaniards in the Islands, from Camarines, Cebu, and Ilocos, and organized a large army. They appointed Salcedo camp master and commander of the expedition.



THE CHINESE PIER AT JOLO

Even before the Spaniards came to the Islands the Chinese had a prosperous trade with Jolo

*The expulsion of Limahong.* Salcedo sailed into the Gulf of Lingayen with an army of two hundred and fifty Spaniards and twenty-five hundred Filipinos. By making a quick landing, he surprised and destroyed Limahong's entire fleet of thirty-five vessels. He attacked the first fort and captured it. His assault on the second fort was repulsed. He then began a siege, which lasted for four months. During the siege the resourceful Limahong succeeded in building enough boats to carry his men, and made his escape.

The danger from Limahong was now over. For a time it had threatened the power of Spain in the Philippines.

**An early treaty with the Chinese.** In the spring of 1575 two Chinese ships under Captain Omocon appeared in Lingayen Gulf. These ships were in pursuit of Limahong with orders from the governors of Fukien and Chinchiu provinces to bring back the corsair. When Omocon learned, however, that Limahong was besieged by the Spanish forces in Pangasinan, he decided to return and report to his superior that the pirate was as good as captured. Two friars and several other Spaniards went back with him to China, bearing a letter from Governor Lavezaris, who invited Chinese friendship and intercourse. This embassy was well received by the governor of Fukien, who forwarded the letter to the emperor. In February, 1576, a Chinese embassy was sent to Manila with the message that the emperor granted an open port, through which the Spaniards could carry on their trade. It is supposed that this port was Amoy.

#### CHINESE REVOLTS

**The attitude toward the Chinese.** In the early days of the Spanish conquest the Chinese were looked on as a necessary evil. The Philippines were sparsely populated, and food was scarce. Chinese labor was needed to develop the Islands in agriculture, in commerce, and in manufacture. The Chinese came and entered almost every possible occupation. They were not only agriculturists and traders, but metal workers, sculptors, shoemakers, weavers, masons, painters, fishermen, and porters. Finding them skillful and useful, the Spaniards encouraged them to come. The Chinese were quick to take advantage of the good treatment

given them and of the opportunities to make money. In 1571 there were only one hundred and fifty Chinese settled in Manila, but in 1588 there were ten thousand of them.]

[The Chinese were welcomed in Manila, but as their number increased, opposition developed against them. Many of



Courtesy of Bureau of Science

WOODEN TABLE OF THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY MADE BY CHINESE CARPENTERS IN MANILA

the priests disliked them because of their religion ; the Filipinos looked on them with disfavor for economic reasons ; the government suspected them of conspiracy and rebellion. The result was that they were confined to certain localities, in the vicinity of the city, where they lived and carried on their occupations. During the night, particularly, they were obliged to stay in a special building called the Alcaicería or Parián. }



The government sought to restrict Chinese immigration by placing a limit on the number of those who could stay, and by making them pay a license tax. In 1620 the maximum number of the Chinese allowed to remain was six thousand. A few years later they were made to pay sixty-four



A CHINESE CHURCH IN MANILA

reals for permission to stay, five reals for tribute, and twelve reals for house tax. These restrictions were of little avail, partly because the officials were often bribed by the Chinese.

For years, in spite of the restrictions, the Chinese continued to immigrate in large numbers. Many of them adopted the customs of the country and the Christian religion, and intermarried with the Filipinos. Others remained apart, living in their own way and professing the faith of their fathers. But as a whole, they formed a good proportion of the population, and their influence became marked.

**The Chinese revolt of 1603.** The fear of a Chinese revolt was not altogether groundless. In 1603 three Chinese mandarins arrived at Manila. They said they were sent by the emperor to investigate the report of a mountain of gold in Cavite. The Spaniards were distrustful. They suspected that these men had come to spy out the situation and fortifications of the city, and that the story of the mountain of gold was merely an excuse. So alarmed were the government officials that after the departure of the mandarins they took measures to improve the defenses. These preparations in turn aroused suspicion on the part of the Chinese in Manila, who feared that the Spaniards were about to massacre them. They rose in revolt. In Tondo and Quiapo they set fire to buildings and made terrible massacres. To put down the revolt, one hundred and thirty Spaniards under Luis Dasmariñas marched against the rebels, but were defeated and nearly all killed. Then the Chinese stormed the Walled City, but here they were repulsed and driven to San Pablo del Monte. At this place they were attacked by a large force of Spaniards and Filipinos, and twenty-three thousand of them perished in the fight.)

**The revolt of 1639.** The massacre of 1603 greatly reduced the number of Chinese in Manila, but the immigration continued in such large numbers that by 1639 there were more than thirty thousand living in the Islands. In this year another Chinese rebellion broke out in Manila and the neighboring provinces. The chief cause of this revolt was an order of Governor Hurtado de Corcuera compelling the Chinese to go to work in Calamba. An additional cause was the harassing of the Chinese for delinquency in paying their licenses and tribute.

The revolt began in the town of Calamba. It soon spread to the neighboring towns and then to Manila. The alcalde mayor of Laguna and two priests were killed, and many churches were burned. At San Pedro Macati the Chinese were met and defeated by a force of Spaniards and Filipinos. The disorders lasted into the next year, when the revolt was finally suppressed. This uprising cost the loss of many lives and of a great amount of property. About twenty thousand Chinese were killed and seven million pesos' worth of property was destroyed.

**The revolt of 1662.** In the spring of 1662 there arrived at Manila an ambassador from the noted Chinese pirate Cotsen, or Koxinga, the conqueror of Formosa, who demanded that the Islands should pay tribute. The Spaniards considered this an insult, and decided to expel the non-Christian Chinese. The Chinese residents began to fear for their own safety. They believed that the Spaniards were planning to massacre them all, and rose in rebellion. Those who were living in the Parián fled to Santa Cruz and immediately began hostilities. The revolt was quickly put down and many of the rebels were killed.

**Tingco's conspiracy.** From time to time, in spite of the care exercised by the government in admitting the Chinese, bad characters succeeded in gaining entrance. In 1686, living among the Chinese in Manila, were many fugitive criminals from Fukien. These malefactors, under the leadership of Tingco, conspired to kill the Spaniards. Their plot, however, was discovered by the government, and their leader Tingco was captured and executed. Many of the Chinese escaped to Pasay, where they were put to rout by the government forces.

## RESTRICTING CHINESE COMPETITION

**Attempts to supplant the Chinese with Spanish and mestizo traders.** Because of these various revolts the number of Chinese allowed to stay in the Islands was greatly reduced, and their immigration was much more restricted. Occasionally a great number of them were sent back to China to lessen the danger of rebellion. It was feared, however, that the reduction of the number of Chinese residents would seriously interfere with the internal trade of the Islands. So Governor Arandía organized a company of Spanish and mestizo merchants for the purpose of opening retail shops. The capital first raised was seventy-six thousand five hundred pesos ; but this was soon increased by a loan of one hundred and thirty thousand pesos from the charitable and religious organizations. The enterprise did not work well, and after existing a year was allowed to die. The Spaniards and mestizos had failed where the Chinese had usually been successful.)

**Chinese immigration.** In spite of the general usefulness of the Chinese the Spanish government felt that their number should be kept within a certain limit, and that their immigration should be restricted.)

Since American occupation, Chinese immigration has been restricted by an Exclusion Act similar to the one in force in the United States. This act was authorized by the United States government ; for on investigation the government was led to the conclusion that an influx of Chinese laborers would hurt the industrial development of the Filipinos. Moreover, it was believed that the body of laborers already in the Philippines, if developed and organized, was sufficient.



**QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW**

1. Tell about the early relations of the Philippines with China.
2. Who was Limahong? Why did he come to the Philippines? What was the result of his attempt to capture Manila? Tell of his attempt to found a settlement in Pangasinan.
3. Describe the general attitude toward the Chinese about the end of the sixteenth century. Why were they allowed to come and settle in the Philippines? Why were they feared? What was the Parián?
4. Name some of the occupations that the Chinese followed.
5. What measure did Arandía introduce to prevent depression of trade after the banishments of the Chinese? How successful was this measure?
6. Tell about the laws that have been passed to restrict Chinese immigration into the Philippines.

**TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION**

1. The influence of the Chinese on the Filipino people.
2. Advantages and disadvantages of Chinese immigration into the Philippines.
3. Why the Chinese emigrate to other countries.
4. "The Pioneer Traders of the Orient."

## CHAPTER VII

### THE PORTUGUESE AND THE DUTCH

#### ATTEMPTS OF THE PORTUGUESE TO DRIVE OUT THE SPANIARDS

**Portugal's title to the Philippines.** The Portuguese, sailing east by way of the Cape of Good Hope, discovered the Molukkas, or Spice Islands, in 1512. The Spaniards, coming by way of the Strait of Magellan, discovered the Philippines in 1521. Several months later they also reached the Molukkas. Each country claimed that these islands lay on its side of the Line of Demarcation agreed on in 1494. People at that time did not know enough about the earth to locate the Molukkas or any other islands in the East. Consequently there was trouble between Portugal and Spain over their conflicting claims. The dispute was settled in 1529, when Spain, for the sum of three hundred and fifty thousand gold ducats, ceded to Portugal all her rights to the Molukkas and the Philippines.

**The Portuguese in Mindanao.** Thus in 1529, by virtue of the Treaty of Saragossa, Portugal obtained a clear title not only to the Spice Islands, but to the Philippines. At this period, however, the Portuguese considered the Philippines of little importance, and made no serious effort to occupy them. In 1538 a missionary was sent to Mindanao, who succeeded in converting some of the chieftains; and at different times Portuguese vessels cruised among the Visayas to trade

and plunder. But beyond this the Portuguese did not make any attempt to establish even trading posts in the Islands.

**The blockade of Cebu.** For about thirteen years Spain respected the Treaty of Saragossa, and refrained from sending any expedition to the East. But in 1542 Villalobos was sent to the Western Islands, as the Philippines were then



AN OLD FORT AT CEBU

called, to make settlements. In 1564 Legaspi was dispatched for the same purpose. The result was the Spanish settlement at Cebu. The Portuguese now awoke to their danger of losing both the Philippines and the Molukkas. Their first effort to maintain their claim to the Philippines was made in 1566, when they sent two ships to the settlement at Cebu for the purpose of watching the Spaniards. Two years later the Portuguese captain general himself, Gonzalo de Pereira, entered the harbor of Cebu with a squadron of seven vessels

and demanded the withdrawal of the Spaniards. On the refusal of Legaspi he began a blockade, but after a time he was forced to withdraw on account of the lack of provisions and the appearance of a deadly epidemic, which threatened to destroy his troops.

**The Portuguese expedition of 1570.** In 1570 the Portuguese made another attempt to drive the Spaniards out of the Philippines. Gonzalo de Pereira once more sailed into the harbor of Cebu. He demanded that Legaspi demolish his fortifications. The Spanish captain refused. Pereira then used his cannon, but with little effect. Again he blockaded the town, but again he had to raise the blockade and sail away.

**The conquest of Portugal by Spain.** In 1580, by right of conquest, Philip II annexed Portugal to Spain. This ended the conflict between the two countries. The Portuguese Eastern possessions now came under the nominal control of the Spanish crown, although actual occupation was never successfully undertaken. Spain attempted to assert her authority over the Molukkas, and fitted out several expeditions in Manila. These expeditions, however, accomplished nothing. They were a drain on the resources of the royal treasury; they forced many of the Filipinos to hard work at the oars; they sacrificed the lives of many others who fought unselfishly to add to the possessions and luster of the Spanish crown.

In 1640 Portugal regained her independence. But of her possessions in the East she was not able to recover more than three or four, which were of little importance; her great possessions there had passed to the control of other European powers.



## WARS WITH THE DUTCH

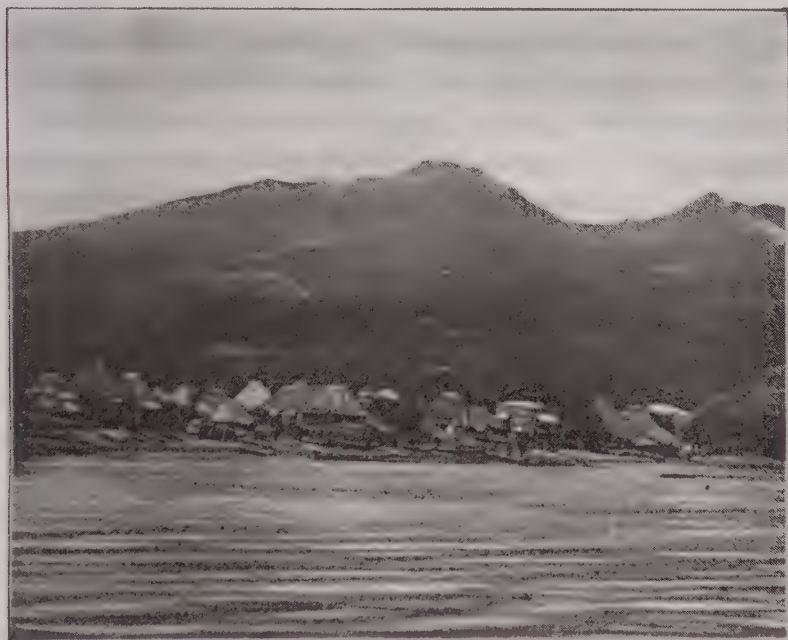
**Why the Dutch came to the East.** Up to 1580 the Dutch had traded with Lisbon. They had practically monopolized, throughout Europe, the distribution of the products coming from the Portuguese possessions in the East. But when Spain annexed Portugal, the Spanish monarch, who was hostile to the republic of the Netherlands, forbade all commercial intercourse between that country and Portugal. The Dutch were a commercial people, depending on trade as their principal means of livelihood. Consequently this decree was a serious blow to their prosperity. To prevent the ruin of their trade, they were forced to undertake the conquest of islands in the East. They sent out several expeditions for the two-fold purpose of trade and conquest. In 1595 Cornelius Houtman succeeded in making an alliance with the native rulers of Java. In 1598 trading settlements were established in Java and Johore. In 1605 the Dutch secured a foothold in the Molukkas.

**Attempts to drive away the Dutch.** The Portuguese had tried to keep the Dutch out of the Molukkas. The Spaniards sent several expeditions from the Philippines for the same purpose. These expeditions, however, not only failed, but aroused the hostility of the Dutch and caused them to retaliate, by sending out their fleets to attack the settlements in the Philippines.

**The first battle of Mariveles.** The first attempt of the Dutch to menace the Philippines was in 1600, when Admiral Van Noort appeared with two ships off the western coast of Luzon. He did not attack Manila, but remained near Mariveles, sinking and capturing Chinese and Spanish boats

bound for the capital. In this way he obtained large quantities of rice, poultry, and other much-needed provisions.

The government at Manila fitted up two old galleons and prepared to drive the enemy away. Antonio de Morga, a judge of the Supreme Court, was placed in command. He



MARIVELES MOUNTAIN AND TOWN NEAR WHICH THE BATTLE OF  
MARIVELES WAS FOUGHT IN 1600

found the Dutch ships near Mariveles. The Spanish flagship, the *San Diego*, engaged the Dutch flagship, and at first obtained an advantage. Later, however, it was itself badly damaged, and sank with great loss of life. The Dutch flagship succeeded in escaping. The other Dutch vessel was captured. Its crew of thirteen men and six boys was taken to Cavite, where the men were summarily executed.

**Acuña's expedition against the Dutch in the Molukkas.** In 1605 the Dutch expelled the Portuguese from Tidore and Amboina, and established factories in these places. This so enraged Governor Bravo de Acuña that he at once began to prepare an expedition to go to the Molukkas and dislodge the Dutch. He collected an army of about fourteen hundred Spaniards and sixteen hundred Filipinos. He fitted out five large ships and thirty smaller vessels. The large ships he mounted well with guns. The fleet started from Manila in January, 1606. It assaulted and captured both Tidore and Ternate. This was the first successful Spanish expedition to the Molukkas.

**The second battle of Mariveles.** The success of Acuña's expedition, however, did not destroy the power of the Dutch in the East, nor keep them away from the Philippines. On the contrary, they retaliated by returning to the Philippines in 1609. This Dutch fleet, under the command of Admiral Wittert, first made an unsuccessful attack on Iloilo and then sailed northward and anchored near Mariveles. Like Van Noort, Wittert attacked and captured several trading vessels bound for Manila.

Governor Silva hastily fitted out six small ships. The two fleets met near Mariveles. After six hours of fighting the Dutch were defeated. The Spaniards captured all but one of their vessels and took two hundred and fifty prisoners. They seized a large quantity of merchandise also.

**Silva's expedition.** Encouraged by his success, Governor Silva now decided to equip a fleet large enough to drive the Dutch out of the East. The objective of his great expedition was to be Java, which was then under Dutch control. The Portuguese in Goa were also to prepare a fleet. The

Spanish and the Portuguese squadrons were to combine their forces. In 1616 Silva's fleet was ready. It consisted of fourteen large ships and many small vessels. It carried three hundred cannon and an army of about five thousand men, of whom three thousand were Filipinos. But the expedition was a failure. The two fleets failed to unite. Silva died of malignant fever in the city of Malakka.

**The battle of Playa Honda.** In 1616, for the third time, a Dutch fleet entered Philippine waters. This powerful squadron, under the command of Admiral Spielbergen, was on its way to the Molukkas. Spielbergen bombarded Iloilo and continued his way to the south.

The next year, however, he returned, with ten ships. A Spanish fleet sailed from Manila Bay under the command of Juan Ronquillo. The fleets engaged at Playa Honda, off the coast of Zambales. The battle lasted till the next day. The Dutch fought with great bravery, but were defeated.

**Continued Dutch visits.** In spite of these reverses the Dutch continued to harass the Philippines. In 1646 they attacked the town of Zamboanga, but were repulsed. The next year they bombarded Fort San Felipe, at Cavite. Failing to capture Cavite, they effected a landing in Bataan and captured the town of Abucay. Here they massacred more than four hundred Filipino soldiers, who had laid down their arms. They then carried on a series of plundering expeditions in the vicinity of Abucay.

**The end of the Dutch wars.** Realizing that the Dutch must be driven out of Bataan, the government sent Captain Chaves to Abucay with three companies of Filipino soldiers. He attacked the Dutch, killing many of them. This loss, which greatly weakened and disheartened the enemy, was



followed by an epidemic. Unable to carry out their purpose, the Dutch sailed away. This was their last attempt to conquer the Philippines.

**Summary.** In the beginning of the era of discovery both Spain and Portugal claimed the Molukkas and the Philippine Islands. But in 1529 Spain ceded her rights to Portugal. In spite of this arrangement, however, King Philip sent an expedition to the Philippines in 1542, and another in 1564, which succeeded in establishing a settlement in Cebu. The Portuguese resented this high-handed policy of Spain, and made several unsuccessful expeditions to the Philippines to drive the Spaniards out.

Meanwhile Spain conquered Portugal. Before this conquest, by their trade with Lisbon, the Dutch had practically monopolized, throughout Europe, the distribution of the products coming from the Portuguese possessions in the East. King Philip, however, because of his hostility to the Dutch, forbade Portugal to open her ports to the Netherlands. Rather than lose their extensive trade, on which they mainly depended for a livelihood, the Dutch sent expeditions to the East to conquer the Molukkas. A bitter enmity, therefore, sprang up between the Dutch on the one hand and the Spaniards and Portuguese on the other. This explains why the Dutch often came to the Philippines and attacked the Spaniards.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. What right did the Portuguese have to claim the Philippines? Review the different attempts to establish the Line of Demarcation.
2. Describe the Portuguese attack on Cebu in 1568; in 1570.
3. What happened in 1580 that put an end to the Portuguese attacks?

4. Give the reasons why the Dutch came to colonize in the East. Why were the Dutch hostile to the Spaniards?

5. Tell about the first battle of Mariveles; the second battle of Mariveles; the battle of Playa Honda.

6. Tell about Acuña's expedition; Silva's expedition.

7. What was the massacre of Abucay? How were the Dutch finally expelled from Bataan?

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The extent of Manila's jurisdiction during the period from 1580 to 1640.

2. The Dutch colonies in the East.

3. The Filipinos' part in the early Spanish conquests.

## CHAPTER VIII

### THE RESTRICTIVE COMMERCIAL POLICY

#### SUMMARY OF EARLY TRADE RELATIONS

**The commercial situation before the Spanish conquest.** At the time of the arrival of the Spaniards a prosperous commerce existed among the different islands of the Archipelago, and with the neighboring countries also. The trading vessels of the people of Luzon were frequent visitors at the coast towns of Mindoro, Cebu, and northeastern Mindanao. During the northeast monsoon the merchants of China and Japan came to the Philippines. The change of the monsoon brought the merchants from the Molukkas, Borneo, Java, and Sumatra, and even from India, Siam, and Cambodia. Since there was no system of money in the Philippines, most of the trading was done by barter. The Filipinos seemed to be on friendly relations with these foreigners. The prosperous condition of trade both surprised and pleased the Spaniards.

**The port of Manila.** The most important commercial towns found by the Spanish were Manila, Cebu, Jolo, and Butuan, in Mindanao. In Legaspi's time Manila seems to have been the leading commercial center of the Philippines. At the beginning of the seventeenth century it was by far the most important town. During the first three decades of Spanish rule its position as a commercial center became more marked. It was the center of trade of the Far East. In its harbor were seen vessels from all the neighboring countries.

## THE RESTRICTIONS ON PHILIPPINE TRADE

**The trade with Mexico.** After Legaspi's conquest of Manila, commercial intercourse was established between the Philippines and Mexico. Oriental goods, particularly Chinese porcelains, silks, and cotton cloth, which found their way to Manila were shipped to Mexico, where they were sold at enormous profits, sometimes amounting to eight hundred per cent. The only method of transportation to Mexico was the slow-sailing galleon, which closely followed the northern route discovered by one of Legaspi's ships. This course ran northeastward from Manila to about the forty-second degree of latitude, then crossed the ocean to Cape Mendocino in California, and then turned southward to Acapulco, the great port of Mexico.

**The restrictions on trade.** In the early part of the seventeenth century the commercial importance of Manila in the Orient began to decline. This was due to the restrictions that Spain put on trade. Domestic commerce suffered because the Filipinos were not allowed to go out of their villages except by permission of the governor or of his *alcaldes mayores* and justices. Foreign commerce grew less because of the high import duties and the repressive inspections of the government. True, later ordinances and acts, especially the Ordinances of Good Government of 1642, permitted freedom of commerce between villages and provinces; but nevertheless the spirit of restriction prevailed until the beginning of the nineteenth century. It was a common belief among the local merchants that a dollar gained by foreigners was one taken from the pocket of a Spaniard.



Before the end of the sixteenth century, in conformity with this restrictive policy, several limitations had been placed on the trade between Manila and Acapulco. The



SPANISH GALLEON, USED IN THE TRADE  
BETWEEN MANILA AND ACAPULCO

most important of these were as follows :

First, commerce was prohibited between the Philippines and the Spanish colonies in America except Nueva España, or Mexico.

Secondly, this commerce with Mexico was limited to the trade between Manila and Acapulco. Only two vessels, run at the expense of the crown, were allowed to sail annually ; later the number of vessels was reduced to one.

Thirdly, these vessels, called galleons, were to carry from Manila to

Mexico not more than two hundred and fifty thousand pesos' worth of merchandise, and on the return trip silver to the amount of not more than five hundred thousand pesos, including the principal and profit of the trade of the previous year.

Fourthly, the privilege of shipping goods in these galleons was restricted to the governor-general, the judges of

the Supreme Court, the religious corporations, and other high government officials and their friends and favorites.

*The reasons for these restrictions.* The merchants of Cadiz and Seville were almost wholly responsible for the adoption and maintenance of this policy of restriction in trade between Manila and Acapulco. It was their influence that caused the government of Madrid to issue restrictive decrees and regulations regarding the navigation and commerce of the Philippine Islands, China, Nueva España, and Peru. These regulations and decrees may now be studied in the collection of Spanish colonial laws called the Laws of the Indies, which was compiled in 1628 and finally published in 1681. The merchants of Cadiz and Seville gave the following as their chief reasons for desiring restrictive trade :

First, if free trade should be allowed between Mexico and the Philippines, great quantities of Oriental goods would enter the American markets, and by competing with Spanish articles ruin Spanish manufacturing.

Secondly, if free trade should be allowed between these countries, large quantities of silver would go to the East for the purchase of Oriental goods, instead of to Spain for the purchase of Spanish goods.

#### THE GALLEON TRADE

**The rich cargoes.** In spite of the many restrictions placed on the Mexican trade, large sums of money were involved in its operation. On the outward voyage to Mexico the galleons carried nothing but the finest fabrics and choicest articles of Oriental manufacture. On the return trip they brought back large amounts of silver. This silver included not only the capital and profits of the previous year's trade,

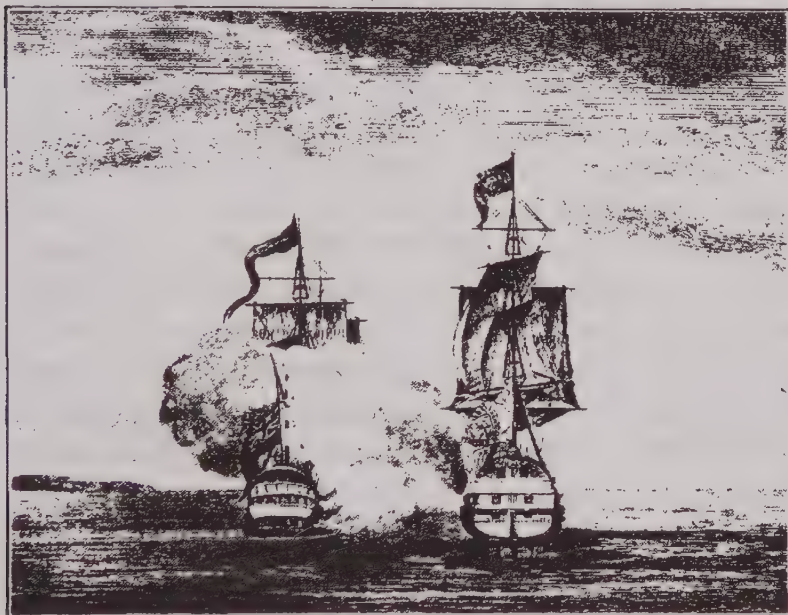
but the real situado, or royal subsidy, amounting in some years to two hundred and fifty thousand pesos. This subsidy was sent annually from Mexico to Manila to help to pay the expenses of the government of the Philippines. Besides the valuable cargo the ships carried the mail and the friends of the colonists. So the yearly return of the galleon was awaited with anxiety, and its safe arrival was the sign for general rejoicing.

**The Obras Pías.** Most of the merchants who invested money in the Mexican trade obtained a large part of their capital from the Obras Pías, or Pious Works. These were funds donated by rich Spaniards for pious purposes, and were under the management of the religious orders. At one time there were twelve or fourteen of these funds, and their total capital amounted to about three and a half million pesos. Two thirds of the capital of each fund was lent to deserving merchants. The rate of interest varied according to the risk involved in the undertaking. The Obras Pías enabled many of the merchants in Manila to continue their business under the most adverse conditions.

*The seizure of the galleons.* The rich cargoes of the galleons, although protected by marines, were a great temptation to the freebooters who in those days sailed the high seas. These pirates, the most noted of whom was the Englishman Thomas Cavendish, would lie in wait on the California coast to surprise a heavily laden ship from Manila. Sometimes, on the return trip, they pursued a vessel to the very entrance of Manila Bay.

*The loss of the vessels.* The commanders of the galleons were often men who had had no training in navigation. They obtained the position through their own influence or

through that of their friends and relatives. Because of their ignorance, the galleons were sometimes wrecked and the cargoes either damaged or lost. Occasionally, even with an experienced commander, the galleons were destroyed by a storm.



THE CAPTURE OF A SPANISH GALLEON IN PHILIPPINE WATERS BY  
AN ENGLISH WARSHIP

*The effect of these mishaps.* These misfortunes brought hardships to the people of Manila. The seizure or wrecking of a galleon meant the loss not only of friends who might be aboard the vessel, but of large sums of money. This resulted sometimes in financial ruin. If the vessel was lost returning to Manila, the government expenditures would be much reduced. The loss of a galleon was a cause for mourning; its safe return was celebrated with the ringing of the church bells.



*The end of the galleon trade.* From time to time efforts had been made, both in Manila and in Spain, to persuade the government at Madrid to adopt a more liberal policy concerning the trade between Manila and Acapulco. These efforts met with no success. Early in the nineteenth century, however, Spain saw fit to remove most of the restrictions. This change was brought about partly by the influence of the more advanced economic ideas in Europe, but more directly by the colonial policy of free trade which had gradually been adopted by the other colonial powers. Thus, in 1811, after carrying all the trade between the Philippines and Mexico for about two hundred and fifty years, the last galleon sailed from Manila. Four years later it made its last return trip.

*The result of the galleon trade.* The result of the galleon trade was the monopoly of commerce by the Spaniards in the Philippines. Because of the enormous profits gained from this commerce most of the Spaniards in the colony were led to enter the field. They flocked to Manila and devoted their time to trade. In this way agriculture and other industries were almost totally neglected. So general was the exodus from the provinces to the capital that at one time there were not enough Spaniards left in Cebu "to fill the offices of alcalde and regidores."

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Review the commercial conditions of the Philippines at the time of the arrival of the Spaniards.
2. Describe the commercial intercourse that arose between the Philippines and Mexico soon after the arrival of the Spaniards. Name four restrictions placed on this trade, and explain each.
3. Give two reasons for the adoption of these restrictions, and explain each.

## THE RESTRICTIVE COMMERCIAL POLICY 117

4. What did the galleons take to Mexico? What did they carry on the return trip?

5. What were the Obras Pías? What connection did they have with the galleon trade?

6. What dangers attended the voyage of the galleons? Describe the effect on the Philippines of the loss of a galleon.

7. Why did Spain finally change from her exclusive commercial policy in the trade between Manila and Acapulco?

8. What effect did the galleon trade have on the general economic prosperity of the Islands?

### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The commercial importance of Manila in the Orient.
2. The story of Thomas Cavendish.
3. Advantages and disadvantages of unrestricted trade.
4. Spain's commercial policy compared with that of other nations.
5. The Ordinances of Good Government.

## CHAPTER IX

### IMPORTANT REVOLTS IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY

#### RELIGIOUS REVOLTS

**Attitude of the Filipinos toward Spanish sovereignty.** Spanish sovereignty was not established over the Philippine Islands without some opposition on the part of the Filipinos. The antagonism of the chief Lapulapu, of Mactan, toward Magellan, the hostility of the chief Tupas to Legaspi, and the general resistance in Luzon to Goiti and Salcedo are proofs of this. The revolts spoken of in this chapter show that the Filipinos, even after Spanish sovereignty had been established, never became completely reconciled to Spanish rule. Indeed, there always existed a general dissatisfaction among the people, which from time to time caused serious uprisings.

**The Tamblot rebellion in Bohol.** In 1622 more than two thousand people, "the tallest, handsomest, and stoutest in the Islands," lived on the island of Bohol. Like other islands of the Archipelago, Bohol was administered by a religious order. But a babaylan, by the name of Tamblot, influenced the inhabitants to rise against the priests, who were Jesuits. To rebel against the priests in those days was rebelling against the government. Tamblot told the people that they would be aided by the spirits of their ancestors. About fifteen hundred Filipinos joined him. Four large villages made ready for revolt. The majority of the priests went to Cebu

to celebrate the feast of the beatification of Saint Francis Xavier. The day of their absence was chosen by Tamblot as the time to begin hostilities.

Bohol at this time was under the jurisdiction of Cebu. So when the alcalde mayor of Cebu heard of the revolt, he led an expedition of fifty Spaniards and more than a thousand Filipinos against Tamblot. They reached Bohol on New Year's Day in 1622. The babaylan was defeated, but he retreated with his followers "to the summit of a rugged and lofty hill, difficult of access," and there fortified himself. Six months after the first expedition, another army of Spaniards and Filipinos landed in Bohol. This army attacked Tamblot and defeated him.

**The apostasy of Banca.** A religious uprising took place in Leyte. This revolt was incited by Banca, the chief of Limasawa, and his high priest, Pagali. It started in the village of Carigara, and extended to six other villages.

Banca was an old friend of the Spaniards. He had received Legaspi in 1565 in a friendly manner, and supplied him with food and other necessities. For this act of kindness he was thanked officially by King Philip II. For many years Banca had been a Christian, but in his old age he gave up Catholicism and went back to the practices of his old religion. He was then living in Leyte. In the village of Carigara he erected in 1622 a temple sacred to the diwatas, or ancestor spirits. With the help of his son and his high priest, Pagali, he persuaded the inhabitants of the six neighboring villages to go back to their old religion. The alcalde mayor of Cebu sent an expedition of forty vessels to Leyte and suppressed this revolt against the Christian religion.



## POLITICAL AND SOCIAL REVOLTS

**A Bornean pretender.** About 1643 a certain Don Pedro Ladía appeared in Malolos, in Bulacan, and said he was a descendant of Rajah Matanda. He called on the people to rise against the tyranny of Spain and to place him on the throne as their king. He claimed to be a native of Borneo. He secured a rather large following, and his plans for revolt were about ready, when they were discovered. He was arrested and taken to Manila, where he was executed.

**The Pampanga revolt of 1645.** From time to time the Filipinos revolted because of dissatisfaction with Spanish rule. The abuses practiced in connection with the collecting of the tributes and the enforcement of labor were the most frequent causes of complaint.

The Pampanga revolt was caused by the injustices connected with the collecting of tribute. The uprising started as a result of the report that all the Spaniards in Manila had been killed by the earthquake of the thirtieth of November, 1645. The people believed that the time had come to free themselves from the hated tribute. The revolt spread quickly, and extended as far as the neighboring province of Zambales. Several attempts were made to put it down. Only after the loss of many lives was it suppressed.

**The Sumoroy rebellion of 1649-1650.** Laborers for the work in the navy yards at Cavite had been taken for some time from central Luzon. Their labor was enforced. So many men were needed, and for such long periods, that the people suffered hardship. Governor Fajardo wished to lighten this burden. To do this, he ordered the *alcaldes mayores* of some of the Visayan Islands to send workmen to Cavite. The

attempt to carry out this order in Leyte caused widespread resentment. Under the leadership of Sumoroy plans were perfected for a revolt. The center of these rebellious activities was the town of Palapag, where Sumoroy lived.

*The outbreak of the rebellion.* Sumoroy began the disorders, on the first of June, 1649, by killing Father Miguel Ponce of Palapag. On Corpus Christi he and his followers came out openly against Spain. They burned the churches and convents of most of the coast villages, and retreated to the mountains, where they formed an independent settlement. They made fortifications to defend the settlement, and posted sentinels to prevent a surprise attack. From here they went forth from time to time and harassed the Spanish forces sent against them. In these little skirmishes they were usually victorious. Indeed, they became contemptuous of the Spaniards. On one occasion, when the Spanish captain asked them for the head of Sumoroy in atonement for what he had done, they sent him the head of a swine.

*The spread of the rebellion to other provinces.* The Sumoroy rebellion was the signal for a general uprising in the Visayas and in Mindanao. There were revolts in Masbate, Cebu, and Camiguin, and in several places in Mindanao. Even the people of Camarines, in southern Luzon, rose and declared themselves against Spain. So general did the rebellion become that the government officials in Manila began to fear for their safety, and Spanish sovereignty was seriously threatened.

*The end of the rebellion.* The governor-general called a council of war to take measures for the suppression of the rebellion. It was decided that Ginés de Roxas should go

to Palapag with an army of Spaniards and Pampangos. At Leyte he was joined by reinforcements made up mostly of native soldiers from Zamboanga and Cebu. In July, 1650, it was decided to carry Sumoroy's position by assault. The only way to the stronghold led up a steep hill, and was so narrow at places that only one man could pass at a time. Nevertheless, under the cover of night and in a heavy rain, the government forces reached the top of the hill and by a surprise attack defeated the rebels. Thus ended the Sumoroy rebellion.

**The Pampanga revolt of 1660.** In 1660 the Pampangans again took up arms. They had many grievances, but their uprising was due to two immediate causes. One was the forcible employment of hundreds of the people in the cutting of timber. The other was the failure of the government to pay for the large amounts of rice collected in the province of Pampanga for the use of the royal officials. The leader of the rebellion was Francisco Maniago, a native of the village of Mexico. The rebels closed the mouth of the river in Bacolor to interrupt commerce between that province and Manila. Letters were written to the chiefs of the provinces of Pangasinan and Ilocos, urging them to join in the revolt. Don Agustín Pamintuan was sent to these provinces to rouse the people against the government.

*Attempts to put down the uprising.* The governor-general, Manrique de Lara, sent up the Pampanga River eleven champans mounted with artillery and carrying a company of soldiers. To prevent the Pangasinan and the Pampangan rebels from joining forces, the governor-general summoned Juan Macapagal, chief of Arayat, to Macabebe for a conference. As a result of this meeting, Macapagal remained

loyal to the government. The Spaniards, assured of the aid of Macapagal, advanced on the rebellious towns of Lubao, Bacolor, and Mexico.

*The end of the rebellion.* The failure of Macapagal to join in the revolt greatly disheartened Maniago and his followers. They were ready for peace. They declared that the cause of the uprising was the failure of the government to pay for the rice collected from them, and the enforced labor in the cutting of timber. They further declared that if these unjust practices were stopped, the revolt would end. The governor-general listened to the declarations of their grievances. He promised that if the rebels would lay down their arms and set the Spanish captives free, he would enforce the following terms:

1. A general amnesty to all those who had taken up arms.
2. The distribution of fourteen thousand pesos among the people as partial payment of the indebtedness of the government.
3. Compulsory labor in the cutting of timber would be continued, but time would be allowed to the people to put their houses and fields in order.

**Malong's rebellion.** The efforts of Maniago to arouse the people in the neighboring provinces were not altogether unsuccessful. Near the end of 1660 Andrés Malong, of Binalatongan, with a following of the people of Pangasinan, declared openly against Spain. The revolt began in Lingayen, but soon spread through the greater part of the province. The Spaniards, including the alcalde mayor, attempted to flee. They embarked in a champan, but were overtaken by the followers of Malong and killed.



*The kingdom of Malong.* Andrés Malong now proclaimed himself king, and bestowed the title of count on Pedro Gumapos, one of his able military leaders. A man by the name of Francisco Pacadua he made judge. Melchor De Vera and Jacinto Macasiag he retained in their positions as generals of the army. He wrote letters to Ilocos, Cagayan, and Pampanga, inviting the people to make common cause with him. The warlike Zambals at once answered his summons and became his ally. He divided his army into three detachments. De Vera he placed at the head of six thousand men, with orders to conquer Pampanga; to Gumapos he gave three thousand men, and sent him with Macasiag to subjugate Ilocos and Cagayan; under his own command he retained two thousand men.

*Attempts to conquer the neighboring provinces.* De Vera began at once the invasion of Pampanga. He subdued the villages along his way and finally camped in Macaulo, near the village of Magalang.

Meanwhile a Spanish army, reënforced by Filipinos, under General Francisco de Esteybar was advancing northward by way of Pampanga. The chief of Porac, who was friendly to the Spaniards, had informed General Esteybar regarding the movements of De Vera. On learning that De Vera's army was camping in a neighboring village, General Esteybar sent his cavalry to reconnoiter. The two armies came upon each other so suddenly that both retreated in surprise. Presently, however, General Esteybar resumed his march, following the retreating De Vera.

Gumapos was more successful in the conquest of Ilocos than De Vera in Pampanga. He captured the village of Lamianan, and sent men to subjugate the neighboring



AN OLD SPANISH MAP OF THE PHILIPPINES SHOWING THE SPANIARDS' KNOWLEDGE OF THE PHILIPPINES IN 1774

villages. On their way to Vigan they met the government forces at the village of Agoo and inflicted on them an overwhelming defeat. They continued their march to Vigan, and on the twentieth of January, 1661, their advance division entered the city almost without resistance.

*The evacuation of Binalatongan.* While these operations were going on in Ilocos and Pampanga, a Spanish army under General Felipe de Ugalde came from Manila by water, and after some fighting with Malong's men captured Lingayen. At the same time General Esteybar was advancing from the south. These two commanders planned to unite and attack Binalatongan, the capital of Malong's kingdom. Malong summoned both Gumapos and De Vera to return at once. But before they could come to his aid, the Spaniards had joined forces and were advancing. On learning this, Malong evacuated Binalatongan and began a retreat to the mountains, to await the arrival of Gumapos and De Vera before giving battle.

*The capture of Malong.* The Spaniards pursued the retreating army, killing many of the rebels and taking others captive. Malong, however, succeeded in escaping. He lived in hiding in the forests between Bacnotan and Calasiao, where a detachment of soldiers captured him and his mother. He was taken to Binalatongan and executed with De Vera, Macasiag, and Pacadua.

*The end of the rebellion.* With the occupation of Binalatongan and the capture of Malong the revolt was practically at an end. The other rebel leaders either laid down their arms or were captured and executed. Gumapos, a brilliant military leader, was captured at the battle of Santa Lucía, where he was defeated by General Esteybar. He was taken to Vigan and executed with several other rebels.

**The Ilocos revolt of 1661.** Influenced by the Pangasinan rebellion under Malong, several chiefs of Ilocos planned to rise against Spain. The leaders were Don Pedro Almazán, chief of San Nicolas, Juan Magsanop, and Gaspar Cristóbal. Pedro Almazán was crowned king, and his eldest son proclaimed the prince. The hostilities began in the latter part of January, 1661, in the villages of San Nicolas, Ilauag, and Bacarra. Several friars were killed and the churches burned. A strong force of Spaniards and loyal Filipinos captured the leaders and suppressed the revolt.

**Summary.** Throughout the seventeenth century revolts occurred in various places in the Islands. In general, the cause was the same, namely, dissatisfaction with Spanish rule. This dissatisfaction resulted from the cruelties practiced by the Spanish officials in the collection of the tribute and in the enforcement of labor. At times the uprisings were due to a religious motive, and were led by some babaylan or priests of the early Filipino religion. Through these revolts several men became prominent, among whom may be mentioned Sumoroy, Bancao, Malong, and Gumapos.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Name two religious revolts that took place during the first three decades of the seventeenth century. Describe each of these revolts. Tell the story of Bancao.
2. Tell the story of Pedro Ladfa. What is meant by a pretender?
3. Name two important rebellions that took place between 1645 and 1650. What were the causes of these rebellions? the results? Describe the extent of the influence of the Sumoroy rebellion.
4. Why did the Pampangans rebel again in 1660? Who was Maniago? Juan Macapagal? Manrique de Lara? What part did each of these men



## 128      BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

play in this rebellion? What was the result of the rebellion? How was the rebellion ended?

5. Tell the story of the kingdom of Malong. Name four other leaders of Malong's rebellion, and tell the part that each played in the revolt.

6. Who was Don Pedro Almazán? Tell about his attempt to found a kingdom.

### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. Difference between a rebellion and a revolution.
2. Why the Filipino revolts were generally easy to crush.
3. The earthquake of 1645.

## CHAPTER X

### THE CONFLICT BETWEEN THE STATE AND THE CHURCH

#### COÖPERATION BETWEEN THE STATE AND THE CHURCH

**The state and the church.** It has already been said that in the conquest of the Philippines the Spanish missionaries worked side by side with the Spanish soldiers. This early coöperation between the army and the clergy was inevitable ; for the spread of Christianity was one of the purposes of Spain in colonization. Moreover, since these missionaries received financial support from the government, they were really employees of the crown.

But this coöperation did not continue long. Hardly had the officials of the king set up their civil government, and the friars their ecclesiastical administration, when the quarrels between church and state began. This was the natural result ; for in reality each of these authorities wished to be supreme. It should be remembered that the governors, although Catholics, obeyed the king ; and that the priests, although Spaniards, supported the Pope. Such a dual control was certain to lead to conflict.

#### THE BEGINNING OF STRIFE

**Lavezaris and Rada.** Strife began as early as 1574. The government officials wished to conquer the Islands by force, and make themselves rich out of the labor of the

people ; the friars favored peaceful subjugation and humane treatment of the inhabitants. In behalf of the clergy Father Rada, the provincial of the Augustinian order, wrote a letter to Governor Lavezaris, charging that the crown officials were making unjust wars and collecting excessive tributes. Governor Lavezaris and other government officials answered these charges by declaring that the wars were carried on in self-defense, and that in consideration of the wealth of the Filipinos the tributes were small. Thus arose strife between church and state, which was to last to the very end of Spanish rule.

**Ronquillo and Salazar.** The first bishop of Manila, Domingo de Salazar, arrived in 1581. The governor of the Philippines at that time was Ronquillo de Peñalosa. Hardly had the bishop assumed the duties of his office, when a quarrel arose between him and the governor. He declared that the governor had too much power. He made many appeals to the king to limit this power, saying that it made the governor autocratic.

*The Royal Audiencia.* On hearing of these disputes through the representations of Salazar, the king established the Royal Audiencia, or Supreme Court, to settle the disputes between the two authorities. In 1584 the three oidores, or justices, arrived and began the sessions of the Audiencia, with Doctor Santiago de Vera as chief justice. The Audiencia, however, failed to settle the conflicts between the state and the church, and in 1589 was abolished. After the lapse of some years it was reestablished.

**The Episcopal Court.** Besides the Royal Audiencia and the other civil courts there was also established in the Islands the Episcopal Court. This was the church court, presided over by the archbishop. In those days crimes

against the government and crimes against the church were carefully distinguished from each other. If a person broke a law of the state, he was tried in the civil court; if he violated a law of religion, he was tried in the ecclesiastical court. But sometimes it was hard to determine in which court the culprit should be tried; for his crime might be a violation of a law of both the state and the church. Such a case invariably caused dispute between the two authorities.

**The right of sanctuary.** It frequently happened that a criminal would take refuge in a church or other sacred place. The law of refuge, then in force in the Islands, gave the culprit the right of sanctuary, which meant that he could not be forcibly taken away by the civil authorities. The right of sanctuary was often claimed, and this also led to conflicts between the state and the church; for the ecclesiastical authorities frequently refused to give up the culprit, and the civil officers would be obliged to take him by force.

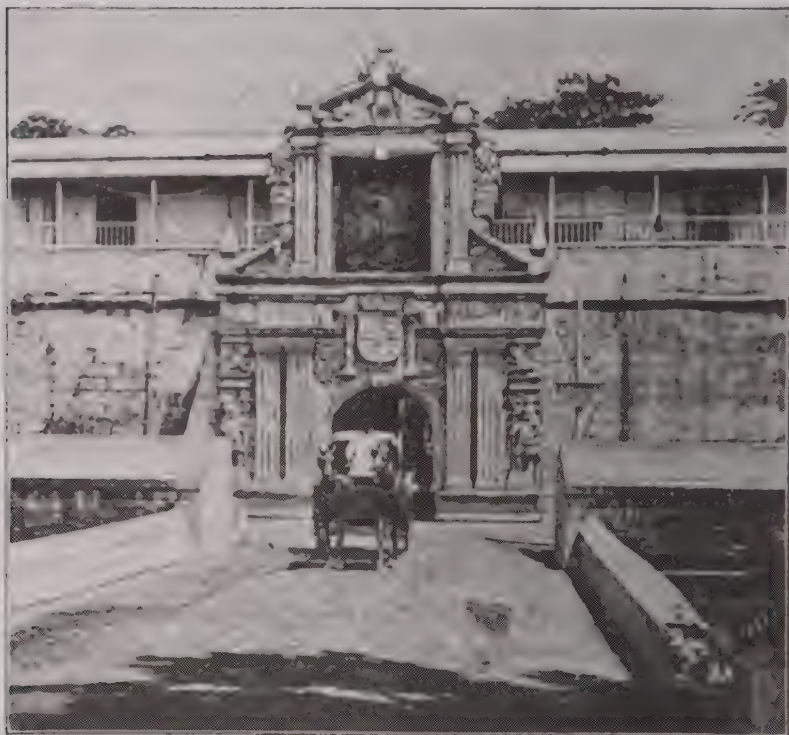
*The story of Nava.* This conflict may be illustrated by the case of Francisco de Nava, which happened in 1635. Nava, a soldier, held a girl as a slave. Archbishop Guerrero ordered him to release her. Nava did so, but afterward tried to regain possession of her. His failure made him angry. One day, seeing her in public, he stabbed and killed her. Then he took refuge in the church of Saint Augustin.

**Corcuera and Guerrero.** Governor-general Corcuera, who is described as being "harsh and austere, tenacious in his resolutions, and wedded to his own notions," demanded the refugee. Archbishop Guerrero thought that Nava should be tried in the ecclesiastical court, and refused to give him up. This made Corcuera angry. He ordered his nephew to take a company of soldiers and bring the culprit before him.



This was done, and Nava was sentenced to death. The archbishop was unable to rescue him.

This high-handed policy of Corcuera enraged the archbishop. He censured the governor, closed the churches, and



ENTRANCE TO FORT SANTIAGO, WHERE CORCUERA IMPRISONED  
ARCHBISHOP GUERRERO

fined the governor's nephew for violating the law of refuge. This increased Corcuera's anger. He protected his nephew and influenced the Royal Audiencia to take sides with him. When the archbishop tried to appeal to the familiar of the Inquisition, Corcuera arrested the archbishop and locked him up in Fort Santiago.

**The residencia of Corcuera.** The turbulent rule of Corcuera came to an end in 1644. It was the custom that the new governor, before assuming control, should hold the residencia of the outgoing governor. The residencia was a sort of court held for the purpose of learning what the conduct of the retiring official had been. During the period of the residencia complaints could be made by anybody, even by the poorest and humblest of the citizens. This was usually the time for vengeance, eagerly awaited by those who had suffered or imagined themselves to have suffered great wrongs.

At the residencia of Corcuera the clergy were active in the presentation of their grievances. The governor's harshness was exaggerated and his acts were bitterly denounced. So many and so serious were the charges against him that his successor, Fajardo, was prevailed on to imprison him in Fort Santiago for five years.

**Salcedo and the Inquisition.** For some years after the retirement of Corcuera, there was a better relationship between the state and the church. In 1663, however, Diego de Salcedo, a selfish, quarrelsome man, became governor. He soon made many enemies, and quarreled with Archbishop Poblete. The enmity between the two men became bitter. When the archbishop died, Salcedo forbade the tolling of the church bells and the embalming of the body.

This act of disrespect angered not only the clergy, but the rest of the Spanish population. The governor was greatly disliked, and in time a conspiracy was formed against him. The conspirators influenced the commissary of the Inquisition to take sides with them, and to start the machinery of the Holy Office against the governor.

The Holy Office of the Inquisition was a kind of court, presided over by the clergy, for the discovery and punishment of heretics, that is, people who believed and spread ideas contrary to the teachings of the church. The Holy Office for the Philippines was in Mexico; but it had its commissary and agents in Manila and in the bishoprics of the



THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CATHEDRAL IN MANILA

Islands. Its procedures were kept secret. Its methods were not made public, nor were its officials known. But its powers were great, and nobody could resist its authority.

The enemies of the governor now conspired with the commissioner of the Inquisition. They withdrew the guards at the palace, and seized Salcedo while he was sleeping. They told him that he was under arrest to face charges preferred against him in the Holy Office. He was sent to Mexico to be tried; here the charges preferred against him were annulled. He started on his return to the Philippines, but died at sea.

**Vargas and Pardo.** In 1683 the strife between church and state was renewed with great vigor. Juan de Vargas was then governor. Felipe Pardo was archbishop. The two men were bitter enemies. The archbishop refused obedience to twenty royal decrees. This conduct was so openly disloyal that the Supreme Court ordered his banishment. He was arrested and sent to Lingayen, in Pangasinan, where he remained an exile for some months.

In the following year Gabriel de Curuzealegui relieved Vargas. The new governor was friendly to the church and permitted the archbishop to return. The restored archbishop at once excommunicated his enemies. The justices of the Royal Audiencia who had sided with Vargas were exiled to different parts of the Archipelago. The retiring governor was sentenced "to stand daily for the space of four months at the entrances to the churches of the city and of the Parián, and in the thronged quarter of Binondo, attired in the habit of a penitent, with a rope about his neck and carrying a lighted candle in his hand." This harsh sentence was commuted, however, and Vargas was ordered to live alone on an island in the Pasig.

#### THE CULMINATION OF THE QUARRELS

**Bustamante and Cuesta.** These quarrels reached their highest point in 1719, during the rule of Fernando Manuel de Bustamante. Bustamante was a decided and stern governor. He believed in doing what he thought was right, in spite of any opposition. He made those who were indebted to the government pay their debts. He rebuilt the fortifications in Zamboanga, contrary to the wishes of all the religious orders except the Jesuits. Thus he made many enemies.



Having heard of a conspiracy against him, the governor imprisoned all those whom he suspected to be in it. Many men, fearing for their safety, took refuge in the churches. The governor demanded one of these refugees, but Archbishop Cuesta refused to give him up. Then the governor ordered the arrest of the archbishop.

This act horrified the clergy and made them defiant. A crowd of friars and refugees rushed to the palace and forced an entrance. Bustamante found himself face to face with an angry mob, bent on his destruction. He defended himself bravely, but was killed. His son, who tried to come to his assistance, also met his death.

**The effect of these quarrels.** These conflicts between the authorities of the state and the church, which began as early as 1574, and continued to the very end of Spanish rule, brought only harm to the country. They were the cause of much misery and violence. They hindered in no small degree the progress of the people. They retarded the development of the Islands. The government and the clergy were often so divided that instead of working together for the good of all they hindered each other's work.

However, these quarrels taught one good lesson. They taught that the state and the church must be separate; that the best interests of each demand it; that the best interests of the people, for which both exist, demand it; that in a nation there can be no dual control.

**Summary.** Although in the beginning the royal officials and the clergy coöperated in the conquest and conversion of the Filipinos, they fell to quarreling and became jealous of each other. Their quarrels at times became bitter, on account of personal enmity between governor and archbishop, the

governor usually being supported by the Audiencia, and the archbishop by the religious orders. The strife reached its culmination in 1719, when Governor Bustamante met his death at the hands of a mob led by friars. The strife continued, however, to the very end of Spanish rule in the Islands. It was the cause of much misery and violence, and hindered the prosperity and progress of the people.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. When may the conflict between the state and the church be said to have begun in the Philippines? What were the charges that Father Rada made against the government? What was the answer of Lavezaris?

2. What was the Royal Audiencia? What were the circumstances that led to its creation? Who was its first chief justice?

3. What was the Episcopal Court? Over what cases did it have jurisdiction? Why was it hard sometimes to determine which court should try a case?

4. What was the right of sanctuary? Tell the story of Nava and the quarrel between Governor Corcuera and Archbishop Guerrero.

5. What is meant by residencia? How was it used as a means of vengeance? Tell the story of Corcuera's residencia.

6. Why was Governor Salcedo hated by the clergy and the rest of the Spanish population? What was the Holy Office of the Inquisition? Tell about its operations. How did Salcedo suffer through the Inquisition?

7. Tell about the quarrel between Vargas and Pardo.

8. During whose rule did the strife between state and church culminate? Name two acts of Bustamante that made him unpopular. What was the immediate cause of his quarrels with Archbishop Cuesta?

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The unlimited power of the Inquisition in other countries.
2. The civil courts in the Philippines during the Spanish régime.
3. The present relationship between the state and the church.

## CHAPTER XI

### THE WARS WITH THE MOROS

#### THE MOHAMMEDAN FILIPINOS

**The origin of the name *Moro*.** More than twelve hundred years ago Spain was invaded by the Mohammedans from northern Africa. These Mohammedan invaders, who controlled a great part of the Spanish Peninsula for many centuries, were called Moros, or Moors. When the Spaniards conquered the Philippines, they found among the inhabitants a rather large number of people who professed the same religion as the Moors. The Spaniards naturally gave these Mohammedan Filipinos the same name, Moros.

**The home of the Mohammedan Filipinos.** When the Spaniards discovered the Philippines, the religious belief of the inhabitants was either pagan or Mohammedan. At that time the Mohammedans occupied not only the Sulu Archipelago and a large part of the island of Mindanao, but portions of the coast regions of Mindoro and other neighboring islands. They had settlements as far north as southwestern Luzon. Besides these regions in the Philippines they occupied parts of Borneo and other islands lying south of the Archipelago. Later, when Legaspi came to the Islands, he found the Moros in a fortified settlement in Mamburao (in Mindoro), in Lubang, and in Manila. After the capture of Manila, the Moros in the northern islands were gradually converted to Christianity or were driven away by the Spaniards.

In a comparatively short time after the Spanish conquest, the Moros were found only in the Sulu Archipelago, in Mindanao, in the southern coast regions of Palawan, and in a few other islands to the south.

#### MORO DEPREDACTIONS

**De Sande's attempt to subjugate the Moros.** In 1578 Governor de Sande led an expedition to Borneo, ostensibly to restore Sultan Sirela to his throne, but really to bring the island under Spanish authority. After the capture of Brunei, the capital of Borneo, he was forced by sickness and lack of provisions to return to Manila. On his way back he sent some of his ships to attack Jolo and Magindanao, and to establish Spanish authority in those regions. The Moros were defeated, but not conquered. They decided to revenge themselves. From that time on they sent out retaliatory expeditions to the north. These expeditions became more frequent, and committed more terrible depredations.

**Moro raids at the close of the sixteenth century.** The closing years of de Guzmán's rule (1596-1602) were years of great activity among the Moros of Jolo and Mindanao. In 1599 a large fleet of fifty vessels raided the coasts of the Visayas. The islands of Negros, Panay, and Cebu suffered greatly; for many of the coast towns of these islands were plundered and burned, and the inhabitants taken captive.

During the following year the Moros returned with a still larger fleet. They had seventy ships, manned with eight thousand warriors. They attacked the town of Iloilo, and so terrified the people of Panay that many left their homes and hid in the mountains. The governor of Panay, with an army of seventy Spanish soldiers and about one thousand



Visayan warriors, resisted the Moros and finally drove them away. During the fierce fighting the governor was killed.

But the Moros continued their piracy year after year. They plundered churches; they carried off the priests for ransom; they captured the inhabitants and sold them into



**A MORO MOSQUE ON THE SHORES OF  
LAKE LANAO, IN MINDANAO**

The Moros are Mohammedans

slavery. So weak was the government in dealing with them that the Moros raided even the coasts of Batangas and Cavite.

#### **Punitive expeditions.**

To punish the Moros for their numerous raids on the Visayas and Luzon, the government sent expeditions from time to time to Jolo and to Mindanao. In 1600 Juan Gallinato, with a force of two hundred Spaniards, went to Jolo immediately after the Moros' raid on

the Visayas. In 1628 and 1630 other punitive expeditions went to Jolo, Basilan, and Mindanao. These expeditions accomplished nothing but a few unimportant defeats of the Moros, and the capture of some of their vessels and cannon.

**The founding of Zamboanga.** When these expeditions failed to subdue the Moros, the Spaniards decided to establish a fort at some point near the Mohammedan settlements. They thought that by doing this they could prevent the raids on the northern islands, and gradually subjugate the Moros.

In 1635, therefore, Governor Salamanca founded the presidio of Zamboanga. There had been much opposition in Manila to the building of this fort. The Jesuits, however, had used their influence to gain the governor's approval. They desired protection from the Moros because they had missions not only in Mindanao, but in Ternate and the Molukkas.



FORT PILAR, WHICH DEFENDED ZAMBOANGA FROM THE MOROS

Juan de Chavez, with an army of three hundred Spaniards and one thousand Visayans, invaded the southern end of the peninsula of Zamboanga and cleared it of its Mohammedan population. Father Vara, a Jesuit, directed the construction of a stone fort. To obtain water, he constructed a ditch to the Tumaga River, six miles distant. The existence of this Spanish fort undoubtedly checked Moro piracy to some extent, but did not stop it.

**Tagal's defeat at Punta de Flechas.** The Moros were as dauntless as ever. In 1636 Tagal, a brother of the sultan of Magindanao, gathered together a large fleet, recruiting

his men from Mindanao, Jolo, and Borneo. He cruised among the Visayas and round Mindoro, ravaging the coast towns and looting the churches. He took captive about six hundred and fifty persons, among whom were three friars and the corregidor of Cuyo.

The Spanish force at Zamboanga watched for the return of Tagal. The fleets met at Punta de Flechas and fought a hard battle. The Moros were defeated, and more than three hundred of them perished in the fight. Tagal himself was slain. One hundred and twenty Christian captives were set free.

**Corcuera's expedition.** Something like a holy war was now declared against the Moros, and an expedition was fitted out. Several Jesuit fathers went with the expedition, which was commanded by Governor Corcuera in person. This expedition reached Zamboanga in February, 1637, and from there proceeded to the Moro stronghold of Sultan Corralat at Lamitan, on the coast of the region of Lanao. They found the town well fortified, and defended by two thousand Moros. After a fierce assault, they captured the stronghold and took about thirty-five cannon and lantakas, and more than one hundred muskets and harquebuses. The expedition then returned to Zamboanga.

From Zamboanga Corcuera led another expedition against Jolo, defended by several thousand Moro warriors. After a siege of several months, he took the town, but failed to capture the sultan, who succeeded in making his escape. Having reconstructed the fort, Corcuera left a force consisting of two hundred Spaniards and an equal number of Pampangan soldiers to garrison the place. Some of the Jesuits also decided to remain.

**Cosío and the Moros.** In spite of the Spanish fort at Zamboanga and the defeat of the Moros at Lamitan and at Jolo, the Moros continued their raids. They secured aid from the people of Borneo and even from the Dutch. In 1718, because of the repeated depredations, Governor Bustamante



AN OLD SPANISH FORT AT TAYTAY, IN PALAWAN

The government built forts of this kind to protect the coast towns from the Moros

rebuilt and strengthened the fort at Zamboanga, and constructed another fort at Labo, on the island of Palawan. Toribio Cosío, who became governor-general of the Philippines in 1721, continued the aggressive policy toward the Moro pirates. In the first year of his rule he sent against them an expedition under the command of Antonio de Roxas. The next year he sent another expedition, under the command of Andrés García. In 1723 he sent a third expedition,



to Mindanao, under the command of Juan de la Mesa. This last expedition captured the fort of La Sabanilla, and killed a great number of Moros, among whom were several princes and datos.

**The expedition of 1731.** Even these reverses did not stop the Moros from their piratical excursions. In 1730 three thousand Joloans raided the coast of the island of Palawan, plundering the coast towns and carrying away many captives. They besieged the town of Taytay, but after twenty days were forced to retire with heavy loss.

Governor Valdez prepared to punish the pirates. In February, 1731, he ordered General Ignacio Iriberri to conduct an expedition to Jolo. This expedition started with a force of about six hundred men, and was greatly strengthened at Zamboanga by additional vessels and men. General Iriberri found Jolo strongly defended, but he assaulted the town and captured it. The Moro houses and boats he burned. Then he ravaged the neighboring islands of Talobo and Capual, and destroyed the Moro salt works.

**The erection of lookout towers.** These expeditions having proved to be insufficient to stop the Moros' depredations, the Spaniards decided on other means of protection. They erected lookout towers and fortifications at such villages on the coast as were most exposed to attack. At these places they stationed galleys and other vessels to guard the coast.

**The concentration of the coast dwellers.** As a further measure of protection, they ordered the inhabitants of the coast regions to concentrate in villages of about five hundred "tributes." The *alcaldes mayores* were to carry out the concentration, either by joining the small villages with the large or by uniting the small villages.

## DISSENSION AMONG THE MOROS

**Ali Mudin and the Spaniards.** About the middle of the eighteenth century Ali Mudin was sultan of Sulu. He was himself a man of little strength of character ; but he had an ambitious brother, Bantilan, who plotted to assassinate him and seize the reins of government. The sultan escaped, however, and went to Zamboanga to ask help from the Spaniards. From Zamboanga he went to Manila. He gained the good will of the governor, and from him received a house to live in, with his expenses paid from the royal treasury. He was welcomed everywhere with great pomp. He was "visited by the leading persons in Manila, and was presented with gold chains, robes, diamond rings, sashes, and gold-headed canes."



THE WATCHTOWER AT NARVACAN,  
IN ILOCOS SUR

Such towers were erected as a protection  
against the Moros

In 1750 Ali Mudin was converted to Christianity, and was baptized with the name Fernando de Alimudin.

During the following year steps were taken by the Spaniards to restore Ali Mudin to his throne. Governor Obando, the new ruler of the Philippines, sent an armada to Jolo by

way of Zamboanga. The stronghold of Jolo capitulated, and the Moros promised to recognize Ali Mudin as their sultan, and to surrender whatever Christian captives they held. Ali Mudin had started with the fleet, but his ship was delayed and did not reach Zamboanga until after the capture of Jolo.

Here follows the strangest part of the strange story of Ali Mudin. On his arrival in Zamboanga two letters written by him to the "king" of Magindanao were discovered. One of these letters was in the popular dialect; the other was in Arabic. In the second letter he told the "king" that the first letter was written at the order of the Spanish governor, and that he could not avoid obeying him, because he was in a foreign land. The governor of Zamboanga, suspecting Ali Mudin of double dealing, arrested him, his family, and his retinue, and sent them back to Manila, where they were imprisoned.

**War with fire and sword.** Bantilan still ruled as sultan of Sulu. He was hostile to the Spaniards, and ordered his followers to harry the northern coasts with their swift craft. The Joloans and their kinsmen, the Tirones, equipped many pancos and raided the Islands as far north as Batangas. Never before had the raids been so destructive and so cruel. The government at Manila was aroused, and declared a war with fire and sword against the Moros. Privateering was encouraged, and a privateer was allowed to keep whatever plunder he could get, and to enslave those he captured. Criminals who volunteered to serve against the Moros were pardoned and set free.

**The retaliation of Bantilan.** The haughty usurper at Jolo redoubled his efforts. He incited the people of Magindanao to make common cause with him. From 1752 to 1754 the

Moros infested the Visayan seas. They besieged Fort Iligan, in Mindanao, and did not raise the siege until a Spanish fleet was sent from Cebu; they attacked the towns of Tagoloan, Iponan, Surigao, and Butuan, in Mindanao, and either killed or enslaved the inhabitants; they extended their raids to the coasts of Batangas and Zambales, in Luzon.

**The treaty of 1753.** In 1753 Ali Mudin, who had been kept a prisoner in Fort Santiago, proposed to the Spanish government to send his daughter with letters from him to his brother Bantilan, urging him and his allies to make peace with the Spaniards. As a pledge of sincerity, he bound himself to liberate fifty Christian captives. The governor having consented to this arrangement, Princess Fatima went to Jolo. She freed the fifty captives, and brought back an envoy who had power to act with Ali Mudin in making terms of peace. They signed a treaty in which the Moros promised to surrender all their Christian captives, to return all the arms captured from the Spaniards, and to restore all the ornaments plundered from the churches.

**The exploits of a militant Jesuit.** Hardly had the treaty been made, however, when the worst Moro raid yet known took place. Governor Obando sent a squadron to Jolo, under the command of Miguel Valdez, to punish the treacherous Bantilan; but this expedition accomplished nothing. Governor Pedro de Arandía, Obando's successor, took the command of the fleet from Valdez and gave it to Father José Ducós, a Jesuit. This militant priest conducted a brilliant campaign against the Moros, capturing more than one hundred and fifty vessels, destroying three villages, and freeing many Christian captives. The news of these exploits



reached Manila in January, 1755, and caused great rejoicing. The governor ordered the Te Deum to be sung by way of thanksgiving.

**Arandía and the Moro princes.** Governor-general Arandía maintained a friendly attitude toward Ali Mudin in the hope that with his help he could end the Moro wars. He allowed the exiled sultan a monthly allowance of fifty pesos and six cavanés of rice. He permitted the members of Ali Mudin's household to return to Jolo. Ali Mudin, however, he detained in Manila, to await instructions from the king. At the time of the British occupation, in 1762, Ali Mudin was still in the city.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Tell about de Sande's attempt to subjugate the Moros of Sulu and Magindanao. What effect did it have on the attitude of the Moros toward the Spaniards and the Christianized Filipinos?
2. What places suffered most from the Moro attacks?
3. What measures were taken by the government in 1628 and 1630 to punish the Moro pirates? When and why was Zamboanga founded?
4. Who was Tagal? Describe the battle of Punta de Flechas and its results.
5. What measures were taken by Corcuera to stop or at least to check Moro piracy? by Bustamante? by Cosfo? by Valdez?
6. What were the lookout towers? Why did Governor Valdez order the concentration of the coast dwellers?
7. Tell the story of Ali Mudin; describe the depredations of Bantilan; the exploits of Father Ducós.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. How Mohammedanism was introduced into the Philippines.
2. The common traits of the Moros and the Christian Filipinos.
3. Mindanao and Sulu as integral parts of the Philippine Archipelago.

## CHAPTER XII

### THE BRITISH OCCUPATION AND THE REVOLTS THAT FOLLOWED

#### THE CONQUEST OF MANILA AND OF THE NEIGHBOR- ING PROVINCES BY THE BRITISH

**Why the British came.** In the eighteenth century England and France were rival nations. They were rivals not only in Europe, but in America and in Asia. Both countries wanted to own North America, and both countries desired possession of the great peninsula of India. This rivalry lasted for nearly a hundred years. The final struggle began in 1756, in the Seven Years' War. France called on Spain to aid her; for the king of France and the king of Spain belonged to the same royal family. Thus Spain became an ally of France and an enemy of England. When the war broke out between England and France, England attempted to seize some of the Spanish possessions. It was to take possession of the Philippines, a Spanish colony, that the British came to Manila in 1762.

**The arrival of the British.** On the evening of the twenty-second of September, 1762, the people of Manila were surprised to see thirteen ships anchored in the bay. They did not know where these vessels had come from, or for what purpose. Their doubt was quickly dispelled when they were ordered to surrender Manila. They were much surprised, because they had not heard that war had been declared

between England and Spain. News traveled slowly. Sometimes it took several months for the government of Spain to communicate with the authorities in Manila; for the only means of travel or communication were the sailing vessels.

**The landing.** The British were under the command of Admiral Cornish and General Draper. The force consisted of more than five thousand British and East-Indian soldiers. They landed at Malate, and occupied the churches of Malate, Ermita, and Santiago. Their repeated demands for the surrender of Manila were refused.

**The defenses of Manila.** Manila was poorly defended. Her fortifications were never intended to resist the invasion of a European enemy. Her armed force consisted of the king's regiment of five hundred and fifty soldiers and eighty Filipino artillerymen. The governor-general was Archbishop Rojo. He was a good man, but the occasion called for a stronger and a more energetic leader than he proved to be. Although word of the intended British attack had reached him weeks before, he had done nothing to improve the defenses of the city.

**The resistance.** The British began a bombardment. The Spaniards, aided by about four thousand loyal Filipinos from Pampanga, Bulacan, and Laguna, bravely resisted. Three times the Filipino and Spanish soldiers marched outside the walls to attack the enemy, but were forced to retreat. On the third of October they held a council of war. The Mexican Spaniards were in favor of surrendering, but the priests, magistrates, and merchants were not. So the fighting continued.

**The surrender.** During the night of the fourth of October the British artillery succeeded in making a breach in the

walls. On the following day, early in the morning, four hundred British soldiers entered the city through the breach. The government officials and the ecclesiastical authorities fled to Fort Santiago. Again the British demanded surrender. The governor was so terrified that without further resistance he acceded to the demand and gave up the city.



FORT SANTIAGO, WHERE THE SPANISH SOUGHT REFUGE FROM THE BRITISH IN 1762

**The terms of surrender.** The British required the surrender not only of Manila, but of the fort of Cavite. They also demanded that all military stores and magazines be turned over to them. In addition they asked for an indemnity of four million Mexican pesos. In return they agreed to guarantee, first, the security of life and property; secondly, the free exercise of the Catholic religion; thirdly, the



freedom of industry and commerce ; fourthly, the preservation of the Royal Audiencia ; fifthly, the proper treatment, with military honors, of the Spanish army officers.

Governor Rojo tried to raise the sum of money demanded as indemnity, but he was able to raise little more than one eighth of the amount, which he turned over to General Draper.

**Simon de Anda.** Among the members of the Royal Audiencia at that time was Simón de Anda y Salazar, a stern judge and a man of unusual strength of character. During the years of British occupation Anda showed himself to be a true patriot and a brave soldier. Early in October, 1762, Rojo appointed him lieutenant governor. The Royal Audiencia made him judge at large. The night before the British assaulted Manila, he left the city, and in a little banca made his way to Bulacan. After the surrender of Manila, aided by the alcalde mayor of Bulacan and the provincial of the Augustinians, he decided to continue the resistance against the British. He established a government of his own, and proclaimed himself governor-general.

**Controversy between Rojo and Anda.** To the honor of Spain it must be said that most of the Spaniards rallied to Anda's support. Rojo ordered the self-appointed governor to give up the fight and surrender to the British. But Anda refused to obey, saying that he, not Rojo, was the rightful governor. Rojo charged Anda with disobedience. Anda accused Rojo of disloyalty to the king. Each called the other a traitor.

**The policy of Anda.** Anda ordered the alcaldes mayores to arm their men and wage war against the English invaders. His plan was to besiege the British in Manila ; and so he issued orders to stop the transportation of food from the

provinces to the city. In this way he intended to starve the British out. To accomplish this, he ordered Busto, his lieutenant general, to establish himself near Pasig and intercept all food products coming to Manila from the province of Laguna. This order made the English angry. They declared Anda a rebel, and offered a reward of five thousand



A VIEW OF THE PASIG RIVER

This river is the natural outlet for the products of Laguna de Bay

pesos for his capture. But the brave judge was not frightened. He continued to defend the cause of his king.

**Busto and Backhouse.** Busto succeeded in establishing himself in the neighborhood of Pasig, and got control of the traffic of the Pasig River. The British commander sent Thomas Backhouse to drive him away. The two armies met near Maybonga. After a little skirmish, Busto retreated to Mariquina. Backhouse continued his march to Pasig, and attacked and captured the little town. Among his prisoners was Sultan Ali Mudin, who had escaped from

Manila when the British bombarded the city. The Moro prince made friends with his captors, who later sent him back to Jolo and helped him to regain his throne.

**The British expedition to Bulacan.** With the intention of putting an end to Anda's resistance, General Draper sent an army to Bulacan, under the command of Captain Slay. The force numbered about twenty-seven hundred men; two thousand of these were Chinese rebels who had joined the British. At Bulacan they were resisted by the alcalde mayor and a Recollect father, but soon overcame the resistance and captured the convent. After a short stay they returned to Manila.

**The treasure of the Philippino.** Meanwhile Backhouse had left a few soldiers at Pasig, and was continuing his march through the provinces of Laguna and Batangas in search of the treasure of the Philippino. The Philippino was a galleon from Mexico. It had arrived with a large sum of money a day or two after the British fleet anchored at Manila. Backhouse found that he had undertaken a difficult task; for the Spaniards moved the treasure from place to place. When he reached Lipa, he heard that the money had been taken to the province of Pampanga. He plundered the town of Lipa, and returned to Pasig much disappointed because of his failure to capture the treasure.

The treasure of the Philippino, amounting to three million pesos, had now been brought safe to Anda. This money enabled him to raise a better army; for up to this time his soldiers had been poorly supplied. Now he succeeded in equipping an army of five hundred Spaniards, two hundred Frenchmen who had deserted from the British, and four thousand Filipinos.

## LOSS OF SPANISH PRESTIGE RESULTS IN REVOLTS

**Spain's loss of prestige.** Since the days of Legaspi, Spain had suffered no serious defeat in the Philippines. Her arms were regarded as invincible. Revolts occurred from time to time, but with one exception they were quickly crushed. The defeat of the Spanish forces by the British began to undermine the confidence of the Filipinos in the valor and power of Spain. The old resentment against the payment of tribute awakened. Insurrections against Spanish authority were planned in the provinces of Pangasinan, Ilocos Sur, and Cagayan. The sangleyes began to plot against Spain. Bands of robbers seized the opportunity to infest and terrorize the provinces.

**Revolt in Pangasinan.** A revolt was begun as early as November, 1762. The causes were many. The Filipinos sought to have the tributes abolished. They asked for the removal of certain government officials. They protested against the enforcement of labor. The revolt centered at the town of Binalatongan. Under the able leadership of Juan de la Cruz Palaris the disturbances spread throughout the province. It was not till March, 1764, that Anda's troops, aided by Filipino soldiers from Cagayan, suppressed the rebellion.

**Revolt in Ilocos Sur.** In the neighboring province of Ilocos Sur another revolt broke out. The causes were practically the same as in Pangasinan. It was a protest against the payment of tribute and the tyrannical government of the alcalde mayor. The alcalde mayor then in office abused the natives and claimed the exclusive right of trading. The Ilocanos rose against his authority.



*Diego Silan.* The leader of this uprising was Diego Silan. He was born in Pangasinan on the sixteenth of December, 1730, of Ilocano parents. While still young, he was employed as a servant by the parish priest of Vigan. Once he was sent by his master to Manila with some men in a little champan. The boat was wrecked near the Cape of Bolinao. Some of the men were drowned; the others, with Silan, were captured by the Aetas, of Zambales. All the captives were killed except the boy, who was made a slave. Later he was ransomed by a Recollect father, of Bolinao, and became the faithful servant of this kind friar. He was liked and trusted by his new master, and was often sent with important messages to Manila. From this early travel in the provinces he came to have many friends in different places. This, with his many experiences, helped him to acquire a position of leadership.

*Silan and the Spaniards.* The Ilocanos having joined Silan, he told the Spaniards that he was going to help them to drive the British away. But the Spaniards, not trusting him, put him in prison. He managed to escape. His imprisonment made his followers angry. They drove the hated alcalde mayor from Vigan. Then they demanded that the Spaniards and mestizos be expelled from Ilocos Sur, and that the tribute and enforced labor be abolished. The bishop of Nueva Segovia raised a native army in Ilocos Norte and marched against Silan, but was defeated. The rebel leader now invaded Ilocos Norte and brought the greater part of the province to acknowledge his authority.

*Silan and the British.* The fame of Diego Silan spread. The British heard of his victories, and offered to form an alliance with him. They promised to send him troops and

to give him weapons and war supplies. Moreover, they agreed to appoint him governor of Ilocos and war captain. Since Silan was expecting to be attacked by Anda at any time and needed the aid offered by the British, he accepted their offer of alliance.

*The assassination of Silan.* Just at this time the career of this remarkable man was cut short by the bullet of an assassin. The Spaniards knew that he was the soul of the rebellion, and that his followers obeyed him blindly. To put an end to the uprising, they thought it necessary to get rid of the leader. They could not capture him, and so they plotted to assassinate him. Some of Silan's friends turned traitors and joined the plot. A mestizo, named Vicos, who was selected to do the deed, secretly approached Silan's house and shot him.

*The end of the rebellion.* The death of Silan so terrified his followers that for a while they kept peace. But Silan's wife, a brave woman, did not rest. She planned to avenge her husband. She took the money left by him and used it to bring about another revolt. The rebels gathered once more, and appointed an uncle of Silan as their leader. But again an army came from Ilocos Norte, and defeated him at Kabugao. Silan's wife, however, escaped to Abra, where she raised a new army. She tried to attack Vigan, but was soon defeated by the archers of Piddig. Again she escaped, but was later caught and hanged. Thus ended the rebellion in Ilocos Sur.

**The revolt in Cagayan.** There was a revolt in the province of Cagayan also. As in Pangasinan and Ilocos, the people wanted to have the tribute abolished. The towns of Cabagan and Tuguegarao were the centers of the uprising, under

the leadership of Dabó and Juan Marayac. This rebellion, however, was quickly suppressed by Arza, one of Anda's lieutenant generals.

**The disturbances in Laguna and Batangas provinces.** In southern Luzon also the people were restless. They committed numerous acts of violence at various places. In San Pablo, in Tanauan, in Rosario, and in Tayabas they attacked the friars and killed several of them.

The disturbances were general throughout the greater part of the Archipelago. Camarines, Samar, Panay, Cebu, and Zamboanga experienced revolts similar to those in the northern and central parts of Luzon, but on a lesser scale.

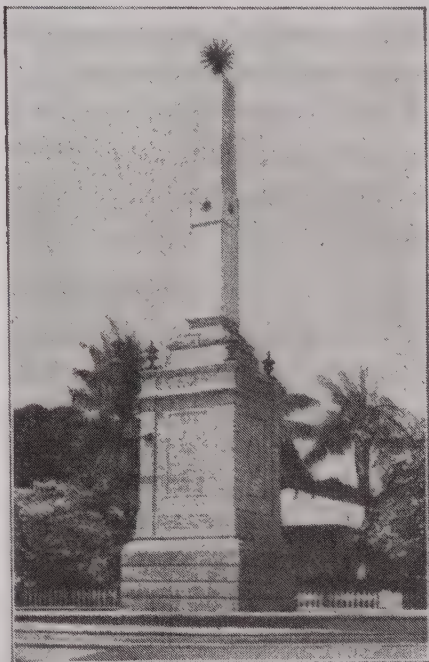
#### EVACUATION OF MANILA BY THE BRITISH

**The treaty of peace.** On the tenth of February, 1763, the treaty of peace closing the Seven Years' War was signed. About six months later the news that the war had ended arrived in Manila. The British commander received orders to turn the government of the Philippines over to the Spanish, and to withdraw. He did not do so immediately, because he refused to recognize Anda as governor. Finally, however, he gave the reins of government into the hands of this able man. On the thirty-first of March, 1764, at the head of a triumphal procession, Anda entered Manila. Early in June the British departed, after nearly two years of occupation.

**English foothold in Sulu.** The British, however, did not give up all hope of retaining a base in the Philippines. During their occupation of Manila they had gained a foothold in one of the islands of the Sulu group. They retained this island long after they had evacuated Manila. Finally,

in 1773, Anda, who was then serving as governor for the second time, sent Cencelly, a government official, to remonstrate with them for their unauthorized occupation of the island. But Cencelly was a poor diplomat. Instead of accomplishing his purpose, he quarreled with the Spanish commander in Zamboanga. The British took advantage of this fact to strengthen their foothold in Jolo. Instead of withdrawing, they built more forts, and began stirring up the Moros against the Spaniards. In 1775 the brave Joloan chief Dato Tengteng seized the forts and killed the British garrison; he captured great quantities of military supplies, arms, foodstuffs, and money. In 1803 the British returned and again occupied the island. They remained, however, only until 1805, when they finally withdrew.

**Summary.** In 1762 the British captured Manila. They did this because England and Spain were at war with each other. Spain was an ally of France, and was therefore drawn into the war between France and England. The British succeeded in holding the city and in extending their



MONUMENT TO ANDA IN MANILA

Simon de Anda, a judge of the Supreme Court, aroused the province against the British and tried to keep the people loyal to Spain



conquest to the neighboring provinces. This victory of the British caused the Spaniards to lose prestige among the Filipinos. As a result, throughout the period of the British occupation, disturbances occurred in various places. The Filipinos tried to rebel against their masters ; but they failed, because they were not united. Two remarkable leaders arose in this period. One was Simón de Anda y Salazar, a Spaniard who fought bravely for the cause of his king ; the other was Diego Silan, a Filipino, the leader of the rebellion in Ilocos.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Explain why Spain was drawn into the war with Great Britain.
2. What part of Luzon did the British conquer ?
3. What reforms did the people demand ? Why did the rebellions fail ?
4. How did the British fleet happen to arrive in Manila before news of the war was received ?
5. Give reasons why fighting continued in the Philippines a year after peace was declared between Great Britain and Spain.
6. Name three important men and one important woman of this period. Explain the part each took in the war and in the revolts.
7. On what terms was the city surrendered to the British by Archbishop Rojo ? Tell about the resistance of Anda.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. Was Anda justified in not recognizing the authority of Rojo ?
2. Why did the British at first refuse to recognize the authority of Anda ?
3. Why did the defeat of the Spaniards cause rebellions ?

## CHAPTER XIII

### BEGINNINGS OF THE FILIPINO CLERGY

#### THE EARLY HISTORY OF THE ORDERS OF THE PHILIPPINES

**Two kinds of clergymen.** There are two kinds of clergymen in the Philippine Islands, the regulars and the seculars. The priests who belong to a religious order are called the regulars ; for they are subject to the *regula*, or rules of the order. They believe in withdrawing from society and in living a life of self-denial and of devotion to religious study and to preaching. The seculars are those priests who do not belong to any organized religious order. They live among the people, and generally serve as priests in the parishes.

**The arrival of the regulars.** There are five important religious orders in the Philippines, namely, the Augustinian, the Franciscan, the Society of Jesus, the Dominican, and the Recollect. The first priests to arrive in the Islands were the Augustinians, who came with Legaspi, in 1565. Their first superior was the famous Fray Andrés de Urdaneta. In 1577 came priests of the Order of Saint Francis. In 1581 two Jesuit fathers, Antonio Sedeño and Alonzo Sanches, came to the Islands with Bishop Salazar. In 1587 members of the Order of Saint Dominic came. The last to arrive were the Recollect Fathers, often called the unshod Augustinians, who came in 1606.

**The partition of the Archipelago.** The greater part of the Archipelago was divided among the five religious orders. To the Augustinians were given the Visayan Islands, parts of the Ilocos provinces, the province of Pampanga, and parts of Pangasinan. The territory about Manila and Laguna and Camarines provinces were placed under the Franciscans. To the Jesuits were assigned the islands of Cebu, Leyte, Samar, and Bohol. The Dominicans received the valley of Cagayan and part of the province of Pangasinan. The last order to arrive, the Recollects, were assigned to other parts of the Islands.

Each of these orders established missions, schools, churches, and convents. They converted the Filipinos and instructed them in the Catholic faith. To be able to teach and preach, it was necessary for the priests to learn the native dialects. The priests compiled grammars and dictionaries of several of the Filipino dialects.

#### HOW THE QUESTION OF VISITATION AND SECULARIZATION AROSE

**The parishes.** Of the priests who first arrived at the Islands the greater number belonged to the regular clergy; the majority of those who came later were also of this class. Few secular priests found their way to the Philippines. In the beginning of the missionary work, therefore, it was necessary to ask the regular priests to take charge of the parishes. In the administration of these parishes the regular clergy were independent of the bishops. Since they could do about as they pleased, they had a strong influence, and became prosperous. When the bishops and the archbishop desired to inspect them, they refused to submit. They said

1595

Nº 1. 4

Enano: a Cagayan  
D. Luis Pagsanjan  
Alaínas

Don Luis Pagsanjan, Mariscal Camarero del Orden de la Santa Cruz  
Capitan General Don Juan de los Rios y Laguna, Virrey de las Indias  
me comento de la mucha necesidad que las colonias de Cagayan y  
Vatines y mineros del Santo Evangelio, y por ende de la mucha que  
conviene y importa que los ayres de ella, para el bien de la pacificación de  
estas y de aquellas naturales, y remedio de muchos males, desfogando y  
dando lugar a los indios, y a los naturales de las colonias y de las  
por daros avisos de lo que se començó a dar en el obispado de Cagayan  
y de la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, al efecto de lo que se començó a dar en  
Cagayan y de la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la provincia de Nueva  
Señales y para la dicha provincia de la orden y de la provincia de la  
donde en Nueva Vizcaya al presente se començó a dar, y de la provincia de  
de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la provincia de  
para el remedio de la mucha que se començó a dar en la provincia de  
obispo de la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la provincia de Nueva  
Señales de mayor firmeza - para el remedio de la mucha que se començó a dar  
En nombre de Jesu Christo, Rey de los Españoles, y de la provincia de Nueva  
Ladicha Orden toma a su cargo y le comento la dicha provincia para  
de la mucha que se començó a dar en la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la  
esta religión para que se començó a dar en la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la  
tarea y para que se començó a dar en la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la  
que se començó a dar en la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la provincia de  
fuerza, al presente, para el remedio de la mucha que se començó a dar en la  
para el remedio de la mucha que se començó a dar en la provincia de Nueva Vizcaya, y de la  
Nada es para - Don. novena.

Don Juan Pagsanjan  
mariscal

Don Pedro  
Carpentero

FACSIMILE OF A LICENSE ISSUED IN 1595 BY GOVERNOR DASMARIÑAS

This document gives permission to the Dominican friars to found convents and carry on evangelical work in the Cagayan Valley



that they were engaged in missionary work ; that in this work the bishops had no authority over them ; and that they held themselves responsible to the heads of their own orders only.

**The question of visitation.** In this way began a series of controversies between the regular orders and the archbishop. Sometimes it was the governor-general who wanted to enforce the visitation, or inspection, of the parishes. The first bishop of the Philippines, Domingo de Salazar, wished to enforce the visitation, but the Augustinians and the Franciscans refused to allow him to do so, preferring to give up their parishes rather than submit. Since there were not enough secular priests to take their places, the bishop had to discontinue his efforts to carry out the inspection.

Visitation was again attempted in 1654. This time the fiscal of the Audiencia tried to enforce it. The religious orders again said they would resign their parishes rather than yield. The fiscal desired to appoint secular priests to take their places, but found only fifty-nine suitable secular priests in the whole Archipelago. For the second time the attempt to enforce visitation failed.

**The Camacho controversy.** In 1697 Archbishop Camacho informed the Pope that as many as seven hundred parishes in the Philippines refused to receive the "visitation and the correction of the diocesans." Not approving of this condition, Pope Clement XI decided that the regular priests in charge of the parishes should receive the visitation. On the twenty-second of April, 1705, the Council of the Indies approved the decision. Archbishop Camacho endeavored to carry out the Pope's command, but the superiors of the orders refused to comply. So the attempt to enforce visitation failed for the third time.

LACK OF SECULAR CLERGY RESULTS IN THE  
ORDAINING OF NATIVE PRIESTS

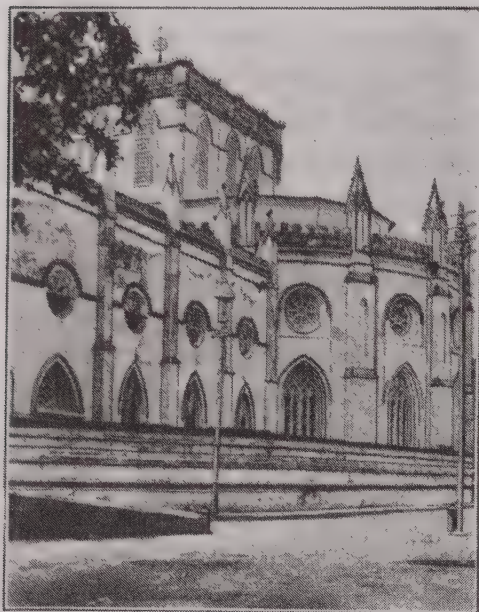
**Santa Justa and Raon.** For more than half a century after the Camacho controversy, the question of visitation was dropped. Archbishop Cuesta tried to revive it about 1708, but a compromise was reached. However, during the rule of Governor José Raon, when Basilio Sancho de Santa Justa was archbishop, the question was once more taken up. Both Raon and Santa Justa were in favor of the enforcement of visitation. The governor ordered the religious provincials to submit, but met with refusal.

**The beginning of secularization.** Santa Justa was a more determined man than Camacho. When the regular clergy abandoned their parishes, he took advantage of the situation and began to assign the parishes of Parian, Binondo, and Bataan to the secular clergy. Since there were few seculars, he ordained many Filipinos to supply the demand. This was the beginning of the secularization of the church; it was the beginning of Filipino clergy also.

**The expulsion of the Jesuits.** The questions of visitation and secularization were obscured for a while by the excitement attending the expulsion of the Jesuits. In 1767 the king of Spain issued a decree ordering the banishment of the Jesuits from Spain and the Indies. The third of April was fixed as the date of the expulsion.

The governor-general was directed to proceed with great prudence, that the decree might be obeyed as peacefully as possible. The Jesuits were not to be forewarned of the order for their banishment; but when the day for the expulsion came, the order was to be promptly carried out.

When the Jesuits were banished, their colleges in Manila and other places were closed. Their curacies in Cavite, Mindoro, Marinduque, Bohol, Samar, and Leyte were given to the other orders. The same thing was done with their missions in Mindanao. Their property in the Islands, amount-



CHURCH OF THE DOMINICAN ORDER IN  
MANILA

ing in value to one million three hundred and twenty thousand pesos, was confiscated by the government.

**Further secularization.** The banishment of the Jesuits led to further secularization. At first the vacant parishes were assigned to the other orders. The Dominicans received the parishes in the islands of Panay and Negros. After a few years, however, they abandoned these parishes, and the arch-

bishop turned them over to the secular clergy, as he had done with some of the curacies in Pampanga.

**Anda's memorial.** In 1770 Anda, who had gone back to Spain, returned to the Islands to serve again as governor-general. He brought with him orders to enforce the right of visitation. These orders were the result of a memorial presented by him to the king. In this memorial he made several

charges against the regular clergy. He accused them of devoting themselves to commerce and of neglecting their spiritual duties; of oppressing the Filipinos and of maltreating their headmen. He declared further that the friars interfered with civil matters and caused trouble. He made other charges against the regulars, and urged the secularization of the curacies.

#### ORDAINING OF FILIPINOS AND ABANDONMENT OF SECULARIZATION CAUSE ILL FEELING BETWEEN THE SPANIARDS AND THE FILIPINOS

**Secularization under Anda.** Governor Anda endeavored to enforce the right of visitation, and proceeded with the secularization of the parishes. But like Raon, he found it difficult. As in previous years, the regular clergy refused to comply, although Archbishop Santa Justa sided with the governor. In 1774 a royal decree ordered the secularization of the parishes as fast as they became vacant. Thus, in spite of the opposition of the religious orders, more parishes were given to the secular clergy.

**Charges against the Filipino priests.** Many of the secular priests were Filipinos. These native clergymen were ordained in Manila, after a short period of training, and were assigned by Santa Justa to the administration of the parishes left vacant by the regulars. But some of the regular priests objected, saying that the Filipino clergy had not received enough training to carry on the work successfully; and other serious charges were made. Some of the men who favored secularization were disappointed with the results. Both Raon and Anda, toward the end of their terms of office, withdrew their support from the plan of secularization. Even the



enthusiastic archbishop, Santa Justa, found many serious defects in the conduct of the native clergy.

**The end of secularization.** Many Spaniards believed that the Filipinos were unfit to be priests, and opposed their ordination. The influence of these men, as well as that of the religious orders, was brought to bear on the government



THE PARISH CHURCH IN BINONDO

in Madrid. The officials in Madrid found many excuses for preventing further secularization. When Fray Juan Antonio de Zulaibar, an opponent of secularization, became archbishop of Manila, in 1804, he appointed the regulars instead of the seculars. Finally, in 1826, a royal decree ordered that the secularization of the parishes should stop, and that the regular clergy should be restored to the parishes which had been turned over to the seculars. We shall see later how the restoration caused ill feeling between the Spaniards and the Filipinos.

**Summary.** The religious orders were established in the Philippines at the time of the conquest of the Islands. The regular priests were given parishes because there were not enough secular priests. The regular clergy refused to submit to the authority of the archbishop, especially with respect to visitation, and in some cases abandoned their parishes. Filipinos were ordained and assigned to replace the regulars. Many Spaniards were opposed to this plan. Secularization was finally given up, and the parishes were restored to the regulars. This caused general ill feeling between Spaniards and Filipinos.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Explain the difference between the regular and the secular clergy.
2. Why were the regulars in charge of parishes in the Philippines?
3. On what grounds did the regulars deny the authority of the bishops over them?
4. What did the regulars do when the archbishop attempted to exercise authority over them?
5. Why were Filipino priests finally placed in charge of parishes?
6. Why were the Filipino priests withdrawn from the parishes? What was the result?
7. Explain how the expulsion of the Jesuits affected secularization.
8. Explain the meanings of the words *visitation*, *parishes*.
9. Name four officials (governors and archbishops) who insisted on visitation. Explain the action taken by each of them.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The partition of the Archipelago among the religious orders.
2. The work of the religious orders during the early history of the Philippines.
3. Anda's charges against the regular clergy.
4. Anda's character, and his influence on Philippine history.

## CHAPTER XIV

### ECONOMIC AND POLITICAL PROGRESS

#### STEPS TAKEN TO INCREASE PROSPERITY AND REVENUE

**Basco's policy.** The energetic and industrious José Basco y Vargas may be placed among the most progressive of the governors of the Philippines. During his rule of about nine years, which began in 1778, he set on foot many new projects for the development of the country. It was his policy to make the Archipelago self-supporting financially. Up to this time a part of the expenses of the government of the Islands had been paid from the treasury of Mexico. To increase the Philippine revenue, Governor Basco tried to improve agriculture, commerce, and other industries. He drew up a general economic plan. In this plan he encouraged the propagation of silkworms and mulberry trees, the planting of cotton and of such spices as cloves, cinnamon, pepper, and nutmegs. He encouraged mining, the manufacture of textiles and porcelain, and the invention of useful articles. He offered rewards to any persons who should excel in these activities. He improved the schools also, and aided in spreading knowledge and in promoting the liberal arts and sciences.

**The Economic Society of Friends of the Country.** One of the progressive things that Governor Basco did was to establish the Economic Society of Friends of the Country. In August, 1780, he received a royal decree from Spain

ordering him to form "an association of selected persons capable of producing useful ideas." But he had established the Economic Society of Friends before he received the decree. The first formal meeting of this society was on the sixth of May, 1781, with Ciriaco Gonzales Carvajal, a Spaniard, as its president.

The society engaged in many activities. It discussed economic subjects and published pamphlets on the cultivation of useful plants, such as coffee, cacao, sugar, hemp, and indigo. It awarded prizes for excellence in weaving cloth or in making dyes, and for the invention of a machine for stripping hemp. It encouraged the introduction of useful agricultural implements from the United States.

The society was in existence for more than a hundred years, although there were times when it was practically dead. During its activity it accomplished much in improving various industries, and in arousing interest in agriculture.

**The monopoly of tobacco.** To carry out his policy of making the government pay its own expenses, Basco established the monopoly of tobacco. The king issued the order in 1780, but it was not till 1782 that the monopoly was really established. It lasted for a century.

Basco began with the provinces near Manila, but extended the monopoly to many other provinces. He told the Filipinos just how much tobacco they should raise each year. If they failed to produce this amount, he took their lands from them. They could not use the tobacco they raised; they had to sell it to the government, at a fixed price. If they wanted tobacco for their own use, they must buy it of the government. The government bought the tobacco at a low price, and sold it back at a large profit.



The monopoly of tobacco proved to be a good source of income for the government. Sometimes the profit was enormous, but this was the result of enforced labor and unjust dealing. On the other hand, the monopoly of tobacco had this fortunate result, that it brought large areas of land under cultivation. This was a benefit to the country.



Courtesy of Bureau of Science

THE MONOPOLY OF TOBACCO BROUGHT LARGE AREAS OF LAND  
UNDER CULTIVATION IN THE CAGAYAN VALLEY

There were many abuses in connection with the monopoly of tobacco. The government officials were often dishonest and cruel. Sometimes the poor growers went for years without their pay. Their houses were entered and searched, and many cruelties were committed. In some places smuggling flourished. This was possible because the government officials received large bribes from the smugglers. Such a

system of raising revenue is unjust. It is the duty of a government to protect its citizens, and not to exploit them.

**The Royal Company of the Philippines.** Another measure intended to make the Islands more prosperous was the establishment of a commercial organization called the Royal Company of the Philippines. This company was formed in 1785, by royal decree. The king of Spain invested large sums of money in the enterprise. The company had a capital of eight million pesos. It was under the protection of the crown, and was given the monopoly of the trade between Spain and the Philippines; but it was not allowed to send ships to Acapulco.

The Royal Company was founded for the purpose of establishing better commercial relations between Spain and her colonies, and among the colonies themselves. It was hoped that the ships of the company would carry to Spain not only the products of the Philippines, but of the other Oriental countries. On the return trip these vessels were to carry back to Manila the products of Spain and of the rest of Europe. It was also the purpose of the company to encourage Philippine agriculture and industry.

The king of Spain and the governor of the Philippines did all they could to make the company a success. Nevertheless, it was never prosperous. This was due partly to the hostility of those who were interested in the route between Manila and Acapulco. In 1805 the company was rechartered, but in 1830 was finally dissolved.

**Other government monopolies.** In this period many other government monopolies were established. The chief purpose of these monopolies was to raise sufficient revenue to pay the expenses of the government. The monopoly of

gunpowder was declared in 1786. The next year wine was placed under government control. Other articles, such as buyo and playing cards, also became monopolies.

#### **DISCONTENT FOLLOWS ABUSES**

**Protests against the monopolies.** These monopolies brought large sums of money into the treasury, but they made the people poor and wretched. This caused discontent. The people objected especially to the monopoly of tobacco and wine. They protested against the abuses and cruelties of the government inspectors also. When the monopoly of tobacco was established in the Cagayan Valley, many Filipinos left the province and went to Manila. In Ilocos Norte the people gathered to protest against the injustices of this monopoly. A revolt was prevented by the alcalde mayor and the cura of Batac, who persuaded the people to disperse.

**The Kalinga uprising.** It was during the rule of Governor Basco that the Kalingas revolted, although this revolt was not caused by the monopolies. The Kalingas were a warlike and restless people living in Nueva Vizcaya. In 1785 more than twelve hundred of them rose in revolt against the government officials. Their chief was Lagutao. A force of three hundred musketeers sent from Cagayan put down the rebellion.

#### **CONQUEST AND REFORMS**

**The conquest of the Batanes.** North of Luzon are several small islands called the Batanes Islands. Shortly before the time of Basco the Dominican friars made an attempt to establish a mission there. Governor Basco conquered the islands and annexed them to the Philippines. For this

service he was given the title of Count of the Conquest of Batanes and the principal town was named after him.

**Berenguer's proposed reforms.** Felix Berenguer came to rule the Islands in 1788. He tried to continue the good policy of Governor Basco, and drew up a "plan of reforms for the government of the Philippines." Some of his proposals were excellent, but the government in Madrid was slow in carrying them out. He recommended that the Philippines be made a viceroyalty of Spain, and that the viceroy rule independently of the Royal Audiencia and of the religious orders; that the military force in the Philippines be increased, and that the fortifications of Manila and Cavite be improved; that the city of Manila be thrown open to foreign commerce; that the monopolies of playing cards and gunpowder be abolished; and that the *alcaldes mayores* be given better pay, and not be allowed to engage in trade.



ANTONIO PINEDA

This noted botanist died in the Philippines in 1792

#### STEPS TAKEN FOR THE DEVELOPMENT, PEACE, AND HEALTH OF THE PHILIPPINES

**The scientific survey of the Philippines.** In July, 1789, the Spanish government sent an expedition "to make scientific observations and draw plans and maps of the coasts of Spanish America, the Marianas, and the Philippine Islands."



The leader of the expedition was Captain Malaspina. He had two Spanish vessels, called the *Atrevida* and the *Descubierta*. He charted the San Bernardino Strait, the coasts of some of the Visayan Islands, and parts of the coast of Mindanao.

One of the members of the expedition, Antonio Pineda, a young botanist, was sent to study the flora of the Philippines, and the agricultural conditions of the country. He died in Ilocos, in July, 1792, but in his three years of service he did valuable work on the plant life of the Islands. A monument was erected to him in Malate, in Manila.

**Moro piracy.** In spite of the efforts of the government the Moro piracy continued. The pirates grew bolder and more daring in their raids. From their old fortified town of Mamburao, in Mindoro, they plundered the coasts of Luzon. They went as far north as the coast regions of Bataan. A government squadron from Cavite finally drove them out of this stronghold. To protect the coast towns, a squadron of light *vintas* and *pancos* patrolled the seas. But these defenses did not prove effective. The Moros still frequented the coasts of Mindoro, Burias, and Masbate. They went as far north as Manila Bay. The English and American ships that passed through the China Sea learned to fear them. As many as five hundred persons were captured in one year. The Spaniards tried again and again to put an end to this piracy. From 1778 to 1793 they spent more than one and a half million pesos for the construction of vessels and the fitting out of expeditions. But again and again the Moros came back. Finally it was thought best to replace the squadron of light *vintas* and *pancos* with a fleet of thirty-six launches armed with cannon. At the same time the forts that were the most exposed to attack were repaired and strengthened.



Courtesy of Bureau of Science

### FOUNTAIN TO CARRIEDO, IN MANILA

Carriedo donated money for waterworks, which were begun almost a century later, in 1878, by Governor Meriones

But the Moros were not cowed by these preparations. In 1794 they attacked a Portuguese trader near Iloilo. In 1798 they plundered the villages of Baler, Casiguran, and Palanan, on the eastern coast of Luzon, taking four hundred and fifty captives, among them three parish priests. The ransom for one of these priests, the cura of Casiguran, amounted to twenty-five hundred pesos. The pirates established themselves on the island of Burias and devastated the neighboring coasts.

**Philippine navy.** In 1796 Admiral Álava was sent to the Philippines with a strong fleet. He was not sent, however, to put a stop to Moro piracy; he was sent because of the rumor that England was planning to seize the Islands once more. But the British did not come within the Philippine waters. In April, 1797, Admiral Álava sailed out to attack the British fleet when it was on its way from China to London. He did not meet the enemy, but his squadron was nearly wrecked by a hurricane. He stayed in Manila till 1802, and his squadron became the basis of a navy in the Philippines.

**Progress.** The Islands progressed in spite of Moro piracy and the oppressions of the monopolies. The population increased. Public highways were built. A road was constructed from Manila to Cavite. Manila had larger and better houses. The streets were lighted for the first time at public expense. Sidewalks were built. Better police regulations were made. In December, 1806, a bureau of vaccination was created, with Governor Aguilar himself at the head of it. By this means the vaccination of the people began, and the ravages of smallpox were greatly diminished.

**Summary.** Basco was a wise and hard-working governor. To make the Islands self-supporting, he tried to secure

greater revenue. To do this he established the Economic Society of Friends and the Royal Company of the Philippines. Many abuses were committed in connection with the monopolies, but these monopolies increased the revenue of the government.

The first scientific survey of the Philippines and the conquest of the Batanes occurred during the last twenty years of the eighteenth century. The most severe and most extensive raids of the Moro pirates were also in this period.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. What was the monopoly of tobacco? What were its advantages? What abuses were committed in connection with it?

2. What were the purposes of the Economic Society of Friends? How long did it live?

3. Name a commercial company established during the rule of Basco. Give its aims.

4. Make a list of the monopolies owned by the government.

5. Name three important events during the rule of Governor Basco. Describe them.

6. Give the dates of the following events: the inauguration of the Economic Society of Friends, the establishment of the monopoly of tobacco, and the formation of the Royal Company.

7. How did Moro piracy affect the economic progress of the Islands?

8. Is it wise to raise revenue by means of government monopolies? Name some government monopolies of the present time.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The economic policy of Basco.

2. Government monopolies as a means of raising revenue.

3. The effects of the economic reforms on the material progress of the Philippines.



## CHAPTER XV

### FILIPINO REPRESENTATION IN THE CORTES

#### LIBERAL GOVERNMENT IN SPAIN AND ITS EFFECTS IN THE PHILIPPINES

**The Cortes.** The national legislature of Spain is called the Cortes. This legislature, which makes the laws of the kingdom, is composed of two houses. The upper house is called the Senate, and the lower house the Congress. The members of the Senate are called senadores, and the members of the Congress are called diputados. The diputados are elected by electors chosen by the people.

**Spain under Napoleon.** In 1804 a Corsican soldier became emperor of France. This emperor was Napoleon Bonaparte, one of the greatest soldiers that the world ever produced. He conquered almost all the countries of western Europe. In 1808 he placed his brother Joseph on the throne of Spain. But the Spaniards did not want Joseph Bonaparte to be their king. They rebelled and tried to carry on the government of the country independently of the king. A Supreme Council of the Regency was formed, and on the eighteenth of June, 1810, the Cortes was called. The great Napoleon was really the cause of the assembling of the Cortes of 1810.

**The Philippines in the Cortes of 1810-1813.** Before the nineteenth century, the Filipinos had never shared in the making of the laws by which they were governed. They

were allowed for the first time to send diputados to the Cortes which formally opened on the twenty-fourth of September, 1810. Since the Filipino representatives could not reach Madrid in time for the Cortes of 1810, two substitutes, Philippine residents who were in Spain at the time, were appointed. In December, 1811, the elected member arrived in Madrid. This first Filipino delegate to a Spanish legislature was Ventura de los Reyes, a wealthy Manila merchant about seventy years old.

In the Cortes of 1813 Ventura de los Reyes proposed the abolition of the galleon trade. The idea of suppressing this trade had been suggested as early as 1810, but the commerce between Manila and Acapulco was a source of wealth to so many persons that there was strong opposition to its abolition. Ventura de los

Reyes, however, continued to labor for the best interests of the Islands, and on the fourteenth of September, 1813, a decree was issued putting an end to the sailing of the historic galleons. This was the most important act passed by the Cortes at this time, so far as the Islands were concerned; for it marked the beginning of the end of Spain's restrictive commercial policy and the dawn of a new era for the Philippines.



FERDINAND VII OF SPAIN

During Ferdinand's rule the Philippines sent representatives to the Spanish Cortes

**The first newspaper in Manila.** The beginning of the nineteenth century was a period of continual warfare in Europe, for it was the time when the nations of Western Europe were fighting against the ambition of Napoleon Bonaparte. The Spaniards in the Philippines were impatient for news. To gratify this desire, a gazette was published in Manila, in 1811, to inform the people of what was going on in Spain. Fifteen numbers in all were issued. Before this, Governor Folgueras had in 1809 published a similar gazette on two occasions to quiet the anxiety of the citizens of Manila.

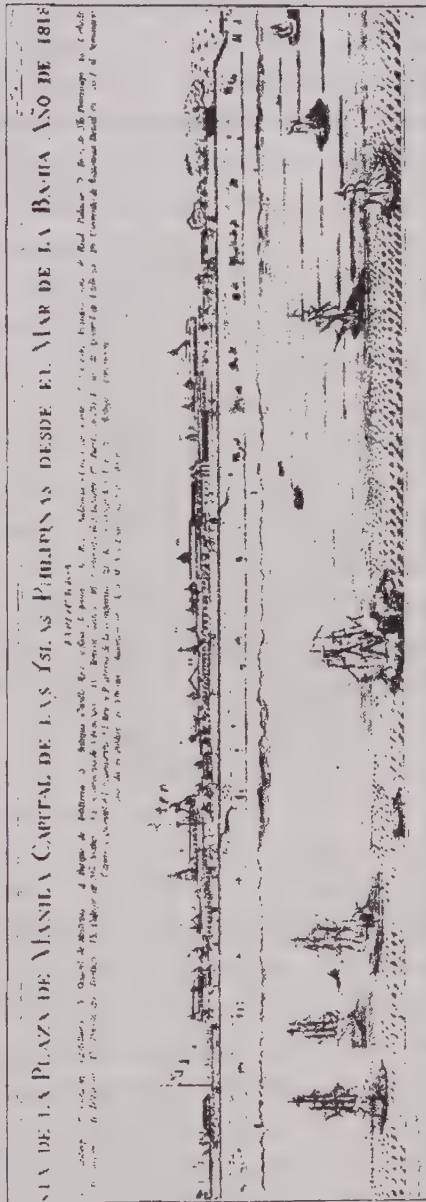
**The Constitution of 1812.** On the nineteenth of March, 1812, a new Spanish constitution was promulgated in Cadiz. This constitution was the highest law in the land. The king, as well as the people, had to obey it. To the people it granted more power than they had before enjoyed. The deputy from the Philippines, Ventura de los Reyes, was one of the signers of this constitution. It was solemnly proclaimed in Manila on the seventeenth of March, 1813.

**The dissolution of the Cortes.** Napoleon restored the crown of Spain to Ferdinand on the condition that he would respect the Constitution of 1812. But when Ferdinand was again on the throne, he did not keep his agreement. In 1814 he set aside the Constitution, dissolved the Cortes, and ruled once more as an absolute monarch.

**The Constitution and the Filipinos.** The Constitution of 1812 declared that the people should have equal rights and privileges. The Filipinos took this to mean that there was going to be equality of rights between the Spaniards and themselves, and between the different classes of Filipinos. They thought that the days of Spanish arrogance were over. They believed that there would be no more compulsory labor

on the public highways and in the construction of bridges, churches, convents, and schoolhouses, with little or no pay.

The Filipinos were disappointed in their hopes; the Constitution of 1812 was not put in force, and the old conditions remained. The news of the restoration of Ferdinand VII was followed by the information that the Constitution had been abolished. Such sudden changes were too much for the people to understand. At first they would not believe that the Constitution had been set aside. They thought that the news was made up in Manila. They suspected the principales of falsehood and showed them great hostility. They became restless, and caused disturbances in various places. Fifteen hundred



VIEW OF MANILA FROM THE BAY IN 1818



Ilocanos seized arms and began plundering, killing, and destroying throughout the province.

**Wise measures of Governor Gardoqui.** The governor-general of the Islands at this time was José Gardoqui. He suppressed the Ilocano revolt, and did his best to keep the country at peace. He did more. He helped to develop the tobacco plantations. He issued orders for the regulation of weights and measures. He tried to suppress smuggling, gambling, and other forms of lawlessness. And to lessen the evil of opium, he prohibited the importation of the drug.

**The Cortes of 1820.** Ferdinand VII did not rule long as an absolute monarch. The Spanish people loved their king, but they objected to his tyrannical reign. So in 1820 a few soldiers in Spain declared the Constitution of 1812 to be the supreme law. This was the occasion for a general uprising. The liberal Spaniards revolted, and compelled the king to restore the Constitution and to call the Cortes.

**The Philippines in the Cortes of 1820-1823.** The new Cortes was formally opened on the ninth of July, 1820. As in 1810, two substitutes were appointed for the Philippines. These substitutes were reappointed for the Cortes of 1821, because no elected deputies had yet arrived from the Philippines. The Cortes of 1821 approved an important resolution presented by Deputy Arnedo, one of the two substitutes. The resolution called for direct mail service between Spain and the Philippines. This meant that news from Spain would reach the Islands much more quickly. In 1822 the four deputies from the Philippines were present. Nothing, however, of importance to the Islands was accomplished. During the following year the Cortes was again dissolved, and Ferdinand again ruled as an absolute monarch.

## THE PHILIPPINES ARE BROUGHT CLOSER TO SPAIN BY THE SEPARATION FROM MEXICO

**The separation from Mexico.** From the very beginning of Spanish rule in the Philippines the Islands were governed through Mexico. In reality the Archipelago was considered a dependency of Mexico.

The first governor-general of the Philippines, Miguel López de Legaspi, was a Spanish resident of Mexico; and Mexican officials often came to rule the Philippines. For many years the only means of communicating with Spain was through Mexico. The standing army of the Islands, the King's Regiment, was to a great extent made up of Mexican Indians. Part of the expenses of the Philip-



JUAN FRANCISCO LECARAS

The leading lawyer in Manila in 1837 and the last delegate from the Philippines to the Spanish Cortes

pine government was paid from the treasury of Mexico. But this situation was suddenly changed; for in 1821 Mexico declared herself independent of Spain. So from that time the Philippine Islands were governed directly from Madrid.

**More newspapers.** In 1821 two more newspapers were established in Manila. One of these, *El Noticioso Filipino*,

a Sunday paper, was first issued on the twenty-ninth of July; the other, *La Filantropía*, appeared on the first day of September.

**The Philippines in the Cortes of 1834-1835.** After about ten years of absolute rule in Spain, Ferdinand VII died. He was succeeded in 1833 by his daughter Isabella. The new queen, desiring to win the favor of the liberal Spaniards, who were opposed to the absolute monarchy, consented to call the Cortes.

The Cortes assembled on the twenty-fourth of July, 1834. At first the Philippines had no representation, because no arrangement had been made for the appointment of deputies. Two deputies were elected in March, 1835, and took their seats in the latter part of the year. About this time rumors were heard of the intention of Spain to sell the Philippines. The two deputies from the Islands protested before the Cortes, saying that the loyalty of the Philippines deserved better treatment.

#### THE END OF PHILIPPINE REPRESENTATION

**The end of Philippine representation in the Cortes.** The Cortes of 1837 decided, in secret session, that the Spanish possessions should be governed by special laws. This meant that no more Filipino deputies were to be sent to the Cortes. From that year the Islands had no representatives in the Spanish legislature. In 1869 an effort was made to reestablish the right of sending deputies, but this was unsuccessful.

**The meaning of freedom.** At this period not all the Filipinos understood the true meaning of freedom. Many cared little for the events now taking place. There were a few, however, who knew the importance of the Constitution

of 1812 and of representation in the Spanish Cortes. These few were of the influential class. They were the leaders of the people. These men often kept quiet, but they believed in a freer government for the colony. They were encouraged in this belief by the liberal Spaniards of Manila. Thus, little by little, the idea of freedom began to dawn on the people; and when they lost their representation in the Cortes, they almost started a revolution.

### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Why was the Cortes of 1810 assembled? Why was the Constitution of 1812 established? Why was the Cortes dissolved, and the Constitution abolished?
2. Why were the Filipinos interested in having deputies in the Cortes? Why could they not understand the rapid changes which took place in the Spanish government? What was the result?
3. Explain how newspapers spread liberal ideas.
4. Name two acts, important to the Philippines, that were passed as a result of the Philippine representation in the Cortes. Show the importance of each. Name the first Philippine deputy.
5. Explain why the revolution in Mexico resulted in closer relations between Spain and the Philippines.
6. Give the dates of the beginning and the end of Philippine representation in the Spanish Cortes.

### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. Why a colony should be represented in the legislature of the ruling country.
2. The effect of the galleon trade on a few individual fortunes and on the general economic progress of the Philippines.
3. The importance of newspapers in a democracy.



## CHAPTER XVI

### UPRISINGS AND REFORMS

#### CHOLERA, MUTINIES, AND CALAMITIES

**The cholera epidemic of 1820.** About the beginning of the nineteenth century foreigners began to come to Manila, usually to engage in business. The Spaniards both in Spain and in the Philippines were opposed to these foreign traders. Although only a few came, the Spaniards were jealous of them, fearing competition in business.

In 1820 a ship from Bengal brought cholera to Manila, and a terrible epidemic followed. A large number of Filipinos died, particularly in Binondo, in Tondo, and in the villages along the Pasig River. At this time, besides the foreign business men well established in Manila, there was a French naturalist, who had come to the Philippines to collect snakes, shellfish, and insects for specimens. Some Spaniards told the Filipinos that the foreigners had poisoned the wells with their specimens, and that this caused the cholera. The Spaniards did this because of their jealous hostility toward the business men from other countries. The Filipinos, believing that the foreigners had caused the epidemic, were aroused to bitter anger against them. Crowds of armed men gathered in the square in Binondo and attacked the houses of the foreign residents.

The disturbances began on the morning of the ninth of October. There were as many as three thousand armed men

in the crowd. English, French, and Chinese were killed, and their houses plundered. The fatalities among the Chinese numbered eighty-five, and among the English eleven. Not one Spaniard was killed. It appears that the government took no vigorous measures to disperse the mob. To permit such acts of violence was not only wrong, but unwise ; foreign merchants would cease to bring their capital to a country where they could not have protection.

**Folgueras's measures for the protection of health.** The epidemic of 1820 spread rapidly because of the lack of trained physicians. Had there been able doctors in Manila, the spread of the disease could have been prevented, and the disease itself eradicated more quickly. But nearly all the towns in the Islands were without physicians and drugs. To remedy this condition, Governor Folgueras tried to establish, in Manila, a school of medicine, surgery, and pharmacy. This excellent plan failed. Instead, a nautical school was founded.

**The mutiny of Novales.** In 1822 Governor-general Juan Antonio Martínez came to the Philippines. With him came many Spanish military officers to replace the Mexican officers serving in the Philippine army. For many years the army in the Philippines had been officered chiefly by Mexicans ; but in 1821 Mexico declared herself independent of Spain, and it was thought best to replace the Mexican officers. The Mexican officers were not discharged at once, but many of the Spanish officers received higher rank than they. The older Mexican officers became jealous, and plotted against the new Spanish officers and against the government.

Governor Martínez discovered the conspiracy. He arrested two of the leaders, Luis Rodríguez Varela and José Ortega, and sent them to Spain. Captain Andrés Novales was

suspected of being in the plot. To remove him from Manila, the governor sent him to fight the pirates in Mindanao.

But one day in the month of June, 1823, Captain Novales unexpectedly returned to Manila and declared himself against Spain. He tried to form a government of his own, with a



MAYON VOLCANO

This volcano destroyed the old church in the foreground

following of about eight hundred dissatisfied soldiers; he captured some of the government officials and imprisoned them; he took some of the public buildings, and tried to seize Fort Santiago, but failed. Governor Martínez, at the head of a Pampanga regiment, soon came to the rescue of the city. Within twenty-four hours he captured Novales and suppressed the mutiny.

**Calamities.** In 1814 there was a terrible eruption of Mayon. The provinces of Albay and Ambos Camarines were devastated. Hot stones, sand, and ashes were thrown forth from the crater. The villages near the base of the mountain were burned and their inhabitants killed. It was estimated that twelve thousand people perished.

In 1824 an earthquake destroyed the barracks in Manila, several churches, and numerous houses. A few days later a typhoon passed through the city and destroyed many buildings.

#### MEASURES TO ENCOURAGE INDUSTRY AND AGRICULTURE, AND TO MAINTAIN PEACE

**Ricafort's social reforms.** Governor Ricafort, who began his rule in the Islands in 1825, was a good man and an able governor. He tried to stop the gambling and the begging. He made laws to punish people who sang bad songs, and parents who did not take care of their children. He attempted to suppress vagrancy. He issued orders to gobernadorcillos that idle Filipinos should be made to work. For any kind of labor, however, they were to receive daily wages. He further ordered that the animals, tools, lands, and houses of the poor should not be seized for debt; and that nobody should be imprisoned for debt.

**Economic measures.** This wise governor tried to encourage agriculture, commerce, and industry also. He issued standards for weights and measures. He allowed the free exportation of raw cotton from the Islands to encourage the cultivation of that plant. He permitted the free importation of implements and machinery for agriculture. To successful farmers he offered prizes and sometimes exemption from paying tribute.



**The end of the Bohol rebellion.** About three quarters of a century before Ricafort became governor of the Philippines, there was an insurrection in Bohol. Under the leadership of Dagohoy the rebellion spread throughout the greater part of the island. Several times the Spanish government tried to put an end to this rebellion, but without success. From 1744 to 1827 the rebels practically controlled the island of Bohol, under a government of their own. This was one of the most successful rebellions of the Filipinos.

In 1827 Governor Ricafort took steps to overthrow the rebels and reestablish the government. He sent two expeditions to Bohol for this purpose, one in May, 1827, and the other in April, 1828. Nearly all the soldiers in these expeditions were Filipinos. There were a few Spaniards from Manila, but the greater part of the army was raised either in Cebu or in Bohol. It took the government about a year to conquer the rebels and establish its authority. According to Governor Ricafort nearly twenty thousand rebels laid down their arms; about three thousand fled to other provinces; several hundred were killed in battle.

To prevent another rebellion, the government thought it best to settle the insurgents in villages. In this way several new towns were formed, the most important being Batuanan, Balilihan, and Catigbian. The town of Batuanan was the largest, with a population of more than six thousand.

**The segregation of the Chinese.** In obedience to a royal decree of the sixth of April, 1828, Governor Ricafort ordered the Chinese to live in villages. The villages were to be composed of barangays, as were the Filipino villages. For each barangay there was to be a headman, or cabeza de barangay, who was placed in charge of the collection of the



RICE TERRACES IN THE CORDILLERA IN IFUGAO

taxes. The Chinese residents were divided into three groups, namely, those engaged in foreign trade, those engaged in domestic trade, and those engaged in the industrial arts. Those who carried on foreign trade had to pay a tax of ten pesos a month; traders in domestic goods paid four pesos a month; artisans paid two pesos a month. If they failed to pay their taxes, they were forced to labor on some estate until the amount was paid.

Many Chinese refused to live in the villages. Some of them returned to China. A large number fled to the mountains.

#### THE EXTENSION OF THE AUTHORITY OF SPAIN IN THE PHILIPPINES

**Galvey's expedition.** Governor Ricafort not only put an end to the rebellion in Bohol, and brought the Chinese under closer control, but undertook the extension of government authority over the people living in the mountains of Benguet and Abra. The subjugation of the mountaineers had begun as early as 1823. In that year Fray Bernardo Lago, an Augustinian missionary, succeeded in establishing the mission of Pidigan, in Abra. To carry the work farther, an expedition was sent to Benguet in 1829 under the command of Guillermo Galvey. The expedition marched up the Cagaling River, from Aringay, and penetrated into the interior. They reached the plateau of Benguet with great difficulty; but they were surprised and delighted with what they saw. On the mountain sides were well-cultivated fields, reaching almost to the summits; and there were herds of cattle, carabaos, and horses. The Igorots, the owners of these herds and fields, were hostile, and often the little band of Spaniards had to fight for their lives.

Afterwards Galvey led other expeditions into the hill-country. These attempts to conquer the mountain peoples resulted in their partial subjugation. In 1846 the provinces of Benguet and Abra were created. .

**The building of roads.** The highways of northern and southern Luzon were built during the rule of Governor Pascual Enrile. He visited many of the provinces, to learn



AN OLD SPANISH BRIDGE BUILT OF STONE

In 1910 there were still several hundred of these bridges in use

how he could improve their condition. He established post roads, which made the intercourse between the different provinces easier. He made plans to bring the coastal plains of Luzon into communication with the interior.

**The work of Peñaranda.** In his plan for public improvements, the governor-general was aided by a relative of his, José María Peñaranda, a military engineer. This young man accompanied him in his tour through the provinces. He surveyed a large part of Luzon and made plans and maps.



Later, when he was governor of Albay, he constructed roads, bridges, and important public buildings in that province.

**Why good roads are necessary.** Good roads are important not only for commerce, but for government. In the Philippines, where the people live in villages and towns, good roads are needed that they may go to and from their fields and transport their products to the markets. Where there are good roads, people travel, and become familiar with each other's customs, traditions, and ideals. Thus the inhabitants become united, forming one people, one nation. Good roads promote peace because the authorities can quickly move troops over them to suppress robber bands, uprisings, and other disturbances.

**Changes in the government of the provinces.** On the thirty-first of May, 1837, a royal decree was issued which classified the provinces. Some of them were placed under civil rule. Caraga, Samar, Iloilo, Antique, Capiz, Albay, Camarines Sur, Tayabas, Cavite, Zamboanga, and the Marianas Islands were placed under politico-military governors appointed by the Spanish War Department. The remaining provinces were placed under *alcaldes mayores* appointed by the Spanish Minister of Finance and Justice.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. What were the causes of the disturbances of 1820? Why did Governor Folgueras desire to establish a school of medicine?
2. What was the cause of the mutiny of 1823? Who was the leader of this mutiny?
3. Name two important governors of this period. Tell some of the acts of each.
4. Tell about the Dagohoy uprising. How was it suppressed? What was done with the rebels who laid down their arms?

5. What was Ricafort's policy toward the Chinese? How did the Chinese like his policy?

6. Tell something important about the following men: Galvey, Enrile, Peñaranda.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The value of medical training.
2. The value of good roads.
3. The reasons why the Spanish merchants opposed the coming of foreign merchants.

## CHAPTER XVII

### FROM LARDIZÁBAL TO URBIZTONDO

#### EFFECTS OF EUROPEAN LIBERAL IDEAS FEARED IN THE PHILIPPINES

**The censorship of books.** At the beginning of the nineteenth century liberal ideas regarding government, religion, commerce, property, and many other things affecting man's happiness and comfort prevailed in some of the countries of western Europe. In England, France, Belgium, Italy, and Spain these new ideas were talked about by a large part of the population, and were discussed in books and newspapers. A few of the books and newspapers found their way to the Philippines. In 1839 the government authorities, not wishing the Filipinos to read these progressive publications, established a board of censors. These censors examined the books that came into the Islands, and did not allow undesirable publications to be put in circulation. Thus it was hoped that the liberal ideas prevailing in Europe during this period would be kept away from the Philippine Islands.

**The school of commerce.** In 1840, at the request of the Board of Commerce, a school of commerce was established in Manila. The establishing of this school was a good thing for the Islands. Every country needs schools of business administration for the training of those who expect to follow a business career.

## THE COFRADÍA OF SAN JOSÉ

**Apolinario de la Cruz.** About this time a rebellion broke out in southern Luzon. The leader of this uprising was Apolinario de la Cruz, a young, ambitious man from the town of Lucban, in the province of Tayabas. From boyhood it had been his desire to become a monk. He went to Manila to study theology. While in college, he attended sermons and lectures delivered by the friars of the city. In this way he learned to be a public speaker. When he wished to enter one of the religious orders, he was not permitted to do so, since this privilege was not granted to Filipinos. Disappointed in his ambition, he entered the Brotherhood of San Juan de Dios, a confraternity composed of Filipinos.

**The Cofradía of San José.** In 1840 la Cruz returned to his native province, and founded a brotherhood which he called the Cofradía of San José. This brotherhood, the patron saint of which was Saint Joseph, was open to Filipinos only. La Cruz tried to secure permission from Manila for the founding of this confraternity, but was refused. In spite of the refusal, however, the confraternity won many adherents not only in Tayabas, but in Laguna and Batangas. The meetings were held in the town of Lucban. They soon attracted the attention of the government; for the authorities suspected there was something more than religion in the brotherhood. The meetings were prohibited, and the leaders arrested.

**King Apolinario.** There seemed to be no other recourse for the brotherhood than to fight. So they began to arm themselves. They gathered in the town of Bay, in Laguna, where they were joined by Apolinario, whom they made their king. Then they removed to the town of Igsaban, in



Tayabas. Here Apolinario tried to secure the permission of the parish priest to hold a novena in the church. The priest refused. The provincial governor soon ordered la Cruz and his followers to disband. On their refusal to do so, he attacked them with government troops. The religious brotherhood now became a rebel army, and with the help of the Negritos repulsed the forces of the governor. The governor himself was killed in the fight.

**The suppression of the brotherhood.** The Spanish government now became alarmed. Soldiers were sent from Manila to aid the provincial troops. The combined forces found the followers of la Cruz in Alitao. Here they fought another battle. This time the rebels were defeated. La Cruz was captured and shot. With his death the Cofradía came to an end.

**The mutiny of Samaniego.** The execution of Apolinario de la Cruz angered the soldiers from the province of Tayabas who were quartered in Malate. They declared themselves against the government. With other soldiers from Tayabas who were in Fort Santiago, they made a secret arrangement to attack the fort. Their leader was a young mestizo named Samaniego. On the twentieth of January, 1843, they made the attack. But the mutiny was quickly suppressed, and Samaniego was shot.

#### CLAVERÍA'S REFORMS

**Governor Narciso Clavería.** In 1844 Narciso Clavería, a man of "culture, probity, and industry," came to rule the Philippines. He believed in a liberal administration for the colony. To learn the needs of the people, he toured the provinces. During his five years' administration this able man did his best to serve and help the Filipinos.

**The correction of the calendar.** One of the progressive things that Clavería did was to correct the calendar. When the Europeans first came to the Philippines, no international date line had been established. These early explorers did not understand the relation between longitude and time, and when they reached the Philippines, they were a day behind European time. This mistake had been known for years, but the Philippine calendar had not been corrected. After a conference with the archbishop, Governor Clavería ordered a day to be taken from the year 1844 by calling the thirty-first day of December the first day of January, 1845.

**Reforms in provincial and municipal governments.** Governor Clavería tried to strengthen the provincial governments by ordering that the *alcaldes mayores* should be men with at least two years' legal experience; furthermore, they were not to engage in trade, that they might devote all their time to the management of the provinces under their care.

This good governor was also responsible for the reorganization of the government of the *pueblos*, or towns. In the Philippines the unit of administration had always been the *pueblo*. It was important, therefore, that these local units be properly governed. By the royal decrees of 1847 and 1850 the government of the *pueblos* was vested in a *gobernadorcillo*, or petty governor, assisted by several deputies and *alguaciles*. The number of deputies and *alguaciles* varied according to the population. This form of municipal government remained unchanged till the end of Spanish rule.

According to Feodor Jagor, a German traveler who visited the Philippines in 1859, the *gobernadorcillo* was elected by a board of thirteen men, composed of the retiring *gobernadorcillo*, six *ex-gobernadorcillos* chosen by lot, and six *cabezas*

de barangay chosen by lot. The person who received the greatest number of votes was declared elected, his election being subject to the approval of the governor-general. The other town officers were elected by the same board of thirteen men. The alcalde mayor presided over the election ; of course the cura was present.

**Filipinos receive surnames.** When the Spaniards came to the Philippines, the natives had names of their own, different from the names of the Filipinos of to-day. The change of names took place with their conversion to Christianity. When the natives became Christians, they received Spanish Christian names and Spanish surnames. Usually, however, on baptism, the first name only was given and no surname. For example, Magellan called the king of Cebu Carlos ; the queen, Juana ; and the king of Limasawa, Juan. From this lack of surnames confusion often resulted, since many persons had the same name. To remedy this, Governor Clavería, in 1849, sent long lists of Spanish surnames to the officials of the provinces with orders to give each family a surname. So to-day almost all the Filipinos have Christian names and surnames ; very few have the old names, such as Tupas, Gatmaitan, Kalaw, Makapagal, and Balagtas.

#### SUCCESSFUL ATTACKS ON THE MOROS

**The settlement of Zamboanga.** The authority of Spain was never thoroughly established in Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago. Spanish arms never succeeded in subjugating completely the fearless peoples of the south. However, the fort in Zamboanga, built by Salamanca, withstood the attacks of the Moros. Round the fort grew up a settlement of mixed Christian population, composed mostly of descendants of the

captives rescued from the Moros. This settlement formed the outpost of Christianity in the Moro country.

**Other European nations in Mindanao.** In spite of the existence of a strong Spanish fort at Zamboanga, other nations of Europe tried at different times to secure a foothold in the Sulu Archipelago. The British attempted to establish themselves in one of the islands in 1773. Later, the Dutch tried to do the same thing. And during the time of Clavería a French fleet succeeded in concluding a treaty with the sultan of Sulu for the cession of Basilan Island. By acquiring this island France hoped to establish a naval base in the Orient.

**The expedition of Oyanguren.** The activity of the French stimulated the Spaniards to undertake the further conquest of the Moro country. The coast towns of western Mindanao as far as the Cotabato River were conquered. The sultan of Mindanao was forced to cede to Spain the broad plains bordering on the Gulf of Davao. In 1847 José Oyanguren proposed to subdue this rich coast at his own expense, on condition that he be made governor for ten years with the exclusive right of trade. Governor Clavería encouraged the undertaking, and furnished him with artillery and ammunition. In two years Oyanguren succeeded in subduing the regions along the coast, and in founding the settlement of Nueva Vergara. Later, however, Governor Urbiztondo was prevailed on by the enemies of Oyanguren to recall him.

**Clavería and the Samals.** But these activities of the Spaniards did not frighten the Moros into submission. Part of the Sulu Archipelago was inhabited by a fearless group of Mohammedan Malays called Samals. At the time of Clavería the Samals had their strongholds on the islands



of Tonquil and Balanguingui, just north of the island of Jolo. From these well-protected bases they were accustomed to go forth in their war praus and plunder the coast towns of the Visayas. By means of these raids they succeeded in taking a great number of captives, whom they sold into slavery.



Courtesy of Bureau of Science

A SECTION OF THE CITY WALL IN JOLO

**Arrival of steamships.** In 1848 three steam war vessels arrived in the Philippines from London. They were the Magallanes, the Elcano, and the Reina de Castilla. These were the first steamships that had ever been sent to the Islands. The steamers could travel faster than the Moro vintas, and since they were not dependent on the wind, they could overtake the Moro pirates. The arrival of the

steamers, therefore, marked a new epoch in the war against the Moros. With reënforcements of Zamboangueno volunteers Governor Clavería now attacked the fortifications on Balanguingui, inflicting a severe defeat on the Samals.

**Urbiztondo and the Joloans.** Governor Urbiztondo continued the vigorous policy of Governor Clavería against the Moro pirates. In 1850 he sent an expedition which destroyed the Samal stronghold in Tonquil. The next year the government forces again entered the Sulu Archipelago, and attacked and captured the strongly fortified town of Jolo. In this old Moro capital the Spaniards found five forts and a double line of trenches facing the sea. The Spaniards destroyed the fortifications and returned to Manila.

**The treaty with the sultan.** The sultan of Sulu now agreed to enter into a treaty of peace with the Spanish government. This was the natural outcome of the vigorous policy of Clavería and Urbiztondo. The sultan agreed to recognize the sovereignty of Spain, and to fly the Spanish flag; to suppress Moro piracy; and to make no further treaties with any foreign power. In return for these things Spain agreed to pay an annual subsidy of fifteen hundred pesos to the sultan, six hundred pesos each to three of the ranking *datos*, and three hundred and sixty pesos to one of the *shereefs*; to guarantee the regular succession to the sultan's descendants; and to allow the practice of the Mohammedan religion.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. What reasons prompted the government to establish a board of censors in 1839?
2. What were the causes and the results of the rebellion in southern Luzon in 1840? Who was Apolinario de la Cruz? Who was Samaniego?

## 206      BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

3. Tell about the reforms of Governor Clavería.

4. Describe the activities of Clavería against the Moros; of Urbiztondo. Name six important articles in the treaty with the sultan of Sulu, and give your opinion as to why each one was included.

5. Name three European nations interested in securing a foothold in Jolo. What was the expedition of Oyanguren?

6. Give the dates of the following events: the issuance of the list of Spanish surnames to Filipinos; the correction of the calendar.

### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. Why Apolinario de la Cruz formed the Cofradía of San José.

2. The election of the gobernadorcillo in Clavería's time compared with the election of the municipal president to-day.

3. The effect of steamships on the war against the Moros.

## CHAPTER XVIII

### COMMERCE AND EDUCATION

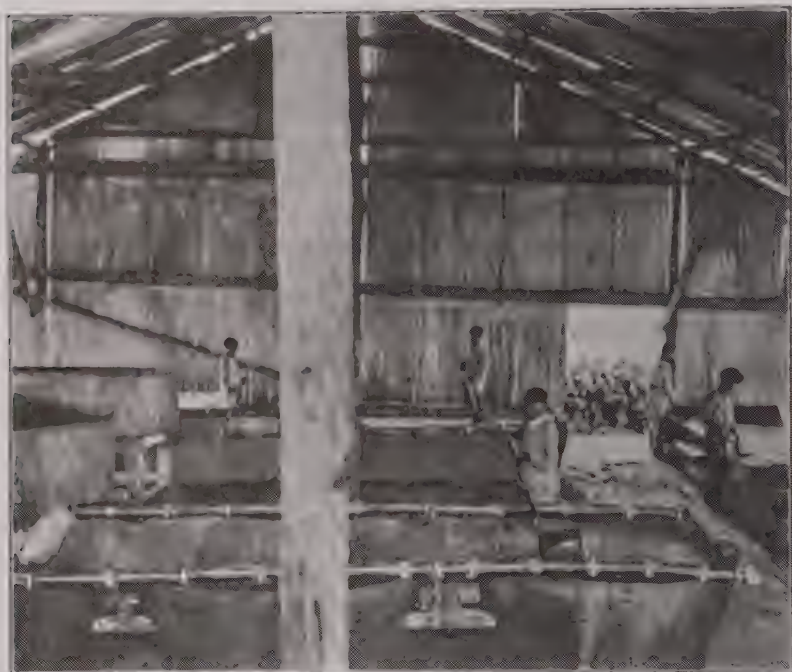
#### THE OPENING OF THE ISLANDS TO FOREIGN TRADE ENCOURAGES AGRICULTURE AND RESULTS IN THE RISE OF A MIDDLE CLASS

**The opening of the port of Manila.** Spain believed in an exclusive commercial policy for her colonies. The Philippines, like the rest of her possessions, could not trade with other countries except through her or through one of her colonies. By this restriction the Philippines were commercially isolated from the rest of the world. In the nineteenth century the colonial powers of Europe began to adopt a more liberal commercial policy than before. They permitted their colonies to trade practically where they pleased. Spain could not long remain indifferent to this new policy, and in 1830 she officially threw Manila open to foreign trade. This meant more markets for Philippine goods. Consequently Philippine agriculture and Philippine industry were both encouraged. Moreover, there was an increase in the number of foreign merchants who established themselves in Manila.

**The foreign firms.** In 1809, before the opening of Manila to foreign trade, one English commercial house had obtained permission to establish itself in Manila. Five years later a general permission was given to foreign merchants to establish houses in the capital. But when Manila was opened to foreign commerce, the number of foreign houses



increased more rapidly. By 1842 there were twelve foreign firms in the city; eight of these were English, two were American, one was French, and one was Danish. In 1859 there were three additional foreign houses. These foreign



A SUGAR MILL OF THE TYPE USED IN THE LATER PART OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

business houses in Manila created a demand for consuls. Before the middle of the century consulships were established by France, the United States, Denmark, Sweden, and Belgium.

**The Banco Español-Filipino.** The first day of August, 1851, is an important date in the economic history of the Philippines. On that day was approved the establishment of the first Filipino bank. The bank, which began its operation

in 1852, was called the Banco Español-Filipino, or the Spanish-Filipino Bank. It had a capital of four hundred thousand pesos. Half of the capital was raised by the sale of a thousand shares of stock to the Obras Pias, and the other half by the sale of the same number of shares to the public. This bank exists to-day, but under the name of Banco de las Islas Filipinas, or the Bank of the Philippine Islands.

**The opening of more ports.** The wisdom of throwing Manila open to foreign commerce was shown by subsequent events. Foreign trade increased, and the advocates of greater commercial freedom petitioned that other ports be opened also. They pointed out that to bring products from distant provinces to Manila for shipment "entailed unnecessary risks, waste of time, and extra expense." It was not till 1855, however, that this petition was granted. In that year a royal decree approved the opening of the ports of Sual, in Pangasinan, of Iloilo, and of Zamboanga. Eight years later Cebu was also declared an open port.

**The increase in agriculture.** As a result of this liberal economic policy, the country entered on an era of material prosperity. Agriculture was greatly stimulated, as shown by the large increase in exports. In 1782 there were exported from the Philippines thirty thousand piculs of sugar; in 1840 the number had risen almost to one hundred and fifty thousand; in 1857 the number had again risen to more than seven hundred thousand. In 1831 fewer than three hundred and fifty tons of hemp were exported; in 1858 the exports amounted to more than twenty-seven thousand tons.

**A Filipino middle class.** Economic changes are always followed by social changes. Material prosperity in a country generally produces a group of people who win economic

independence through ability and hard work. This group in the course of time increases and forms what is generally known as the middle class.

As a result of the material prosperity of the Islands during this period, a kind of Filipino middle class began to develop. In this class were independent farmers, artisans, and business men. They were most numerous in the localities about the commercial centers. It was this class that made the revolution of 1896 possible.

#### NEWSPAPERS, EDUCATIONAL REFORMS, AND AN ENLIGHTENED CLASS

**The press.** Newspapers are a necessity to an enlightened community. As early as 1809 Governor Folgueras issued the *Aviso al Público* to inform the people of the events going on in Europe. The first regular newspaper issued in Manila appeared in 1811. This was followed in 1821 by *El Noticioso Filipino* and *La Filantropía*. However, journalism did not really assume importance until some twenty years later. Among the newspapers that appeared about the middle of the century were the *Semanario*, in 1843; *El Amigo del País*, in 1845; *La Esperanza*, in 1847; *Diario de Manila*, in 1848; *El Comercio*, in 1858; *La Ilustración Filipina*, in 1859. It was by means of these newspapers that the liberal beliefs of Europe were disseminated among the people of Manila and the provinces.

**The censorship of the press.** But the government in Manila and in Spain did not want the ideas of the European liberals to be spread in the Philippines, either by books or by newspapers. In 1856, to control the press, a permanent commission of censors was established. The



THE PORT OF ILOILO HANDLES MOST OF THE SUGAR EXPORTED FROM THE PHILIPPINES



commission was composed of eight persons, four named by the governor and four by the archbishop.

**The return of the Jesuits.** As has been related in Chapter XIII, the Jesuit fathers were expelled from the



THE JESUIT OBSERVATORY, IN MANILA

This is the general office of the government Weather Bureau

Philippines in 1767. Eighty-five years later, however, a royal decree permitted them to return, but under certain conditions. They were to devote their time mainly to educational work, and to missionary labors limited to Mindanao. They were to interest themselves especially in the higher education of the Filipinos. The Jesuits being notable educators,

these restrictions gave an impetus to advanced education in the Philippines. In 1865 was founded the now famous Ateneo Municipal of Manila, popularly known as the Jesuits' College. About the same time, through the efforts of Father Faura, the order established an observatory in Manila. This has done valuable work in meteorology, and is now a part of the government Weather Bureau.

**The early education.** Before 1863, education in the Philippines was left to the religious orders. This was natural; for in Europe, from the establishment of the Christian religion, the education of children was considered to be one of the many duties of the church. The early Philippine schools under Spanish government were mostly parochial schools. They were in charge of the parish curate, who decided on the subjects to be taught, and on the methods of instruction. The teachers were Filipinos, whom the friars selected and trained for the work. They were paid by the parish curates, and were therefore responsible to them. These schools afforded little else than religious training; but their establishment bestowed untold benefits on the Filipinos.

By the middle of the nineteenth century, however, new theories and new ideas regarding education had developed and spread in Europe. The old notions were satisfactory no longer. People demanded that their children be educated by the state.

**The educational reforms of 1863.** The Spanish Minister of War and Colonies desired that the Philippines should benefit from the recent educational changes. In 1863 he decreed the establishment of a system of public primary instruction for the Islands. Every town was to have a

primary school for boys and a primary school for girls. In these schools the Spanish language was to be taught. Teachers were to be appointed temporarily until trained instructors could be graduated from a normal school to be established in Manila. The aim was to reproduce, in the Philippines, the system of instruction used in Spain under secular schoolmasters.

According to the decree the following subjects were to be taught :

1. The catechism, elements of morals, and sacred history.
2. Reading.
3. Writing.
4. The Spanish language.
5. The elements of arithmetic.
6. The elements of general geography and of the history of Spain.
7. The elements of practical agriculture with reference to the Philippines.
8. Manners and social usages.
9. Vocal music.

The girls were to be taught the same subjects as the boys, with the exception of the elements of general geography, Spanish history, and practical agriculture, for which other subjects were substituted.

To administer and supervise these schools, a superior commission of education was created. This commission consisted of nine members, including the governor-general and the archbishop. There were provincial school boards also, of which the superior friar official in the province was a member. In the towns the parish priest was made the inspector of the schools.

These schools were probably not the best that might have been established, but they did a great deal for the education of the Filipinos. The intentions and plans of the authorities in Madrid were good, but they were not faithfully carried out by the government officials in the Islands. The church and the state often quarreled, and from these disputes the Philippines suffered.

**The higher schools.** Although the primary schools were limited in what they accomplished, the higher institutions proved a great blessing. True, the children of the humble laborer in the distant pueblos were neglected, but the sons of the well-to-do gathered in the colleges of Manila from all parts of the Islands. Some studied in the Ateneo Municipal; others attended the University of Santo Tomás; still others enrolled in institutions of less importance. From these higher institutions of learning there went forth lawyers, teachers, doctors, ministers, and men qualified in other ways to take up the affairs of life. These graduates became the leaders of the Filipino people.



MONUMENT TO FATHER BENAVIDES,  
WHO FOUNDED THE UNIVERSITY OF  
SANTO TOMÁS



**A Filipino enlightened class.** The economic and educational improvements about the middle of the nineteenth century made possible a Filipino enlightened class. At the dawn of the twentieth century it was this class of Filipinos that demanded better treatment from the Spaniards, and reforms in the government, particularly changes for the improvement of economic and political conditions. They were the men who sent their children to foreign countries for further education and enlightenment. They were the men who, consciously or unconsciously, were preparing the Filipino mind for the inevitable struggle that was to come in 1896.

#### THE GREAT CALAMITY

**The earthquake of 1863.** But the era of advancement was darkened by affliction. In 1863, the year which gave to the Philippines a system of public primary instruction, the Islands were visited by the most destructive earthquake in their history. In Manila the first shock set the church bells ringing. Almost immediately towers and other tall structures tumbled down. More than six hundred large buildings were destroyed. Five days later another shock almost completed the destruction of the city. The old cathedral, standing on the site of the present cathedral, was in ruins. The Augustinian convent was the only public building left uninjured. The people were stricken with grief and want. For the relief of the sufferers, collections were made in Spain and in the Spanish colonies; but many years passed before the money was distributed, and much of it was not distributed at all. It was a long period of distress and suffering.

**QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW**

1. Discuss the four steps taken by the government to encourage commerce.
2. Explain how the expansion of commerce affected agriculture; how the expansion resulted in the formation of a middle class.
3. Explain why a censorship of the press was maintained.
4. Why was the return of the Jesuits important to education in the Philippines?
5. Explain the connection of the church with education. Explain the plan of 1863 for public primary education, and tell why the plan did not wholly succeed.
6. Explain why the mass of the people remained uneducated, while the well-to-do secured an education.
7. Give the dates of the following events: the opening of the port of Manila; the founding of the Banco Español-Filipino; the return of the Jesuits; the educational decree; the great earthquake.

**TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION**

1. How foreign trade stimulates agriculture.
2. The difference in the systems of schools in the latter part of the nineteenth century and the beginning of the twentieth century.
3. The beginnings of a Filipino educated middle class.

## CHAPTER XIX

### THE LIBERAL MOVEMENT AND THE REACTION

#### A LIBERAL GOVERNMENT IN SPAIN CARRIES OUT REFORMS IN THE PHILIPPINES

**The Spanish Revolution of 1868.** The reign of Isabella II was unpopular in Spain. The queen loved her subjects, but during her rule of thirty-five years she never won the affection of the whole nation. This happened partly because many people in Spain desired more liberal laws, and partly because Isabella changed her mind so often. The people could not depend on her. Like her mother, she "published and annulled constitutions, made and broke promises." Moreover, she fell under the influence of ambitious friars and designing secretaries. The history of her reign was a long story of misgovernment. At last, when the Spanish people could endure it no longer, they revolted, and drove the queen out of the country.

The downfall of Queen Isabella meant the triumph of liberal ideas in Spain. This change at home meant a change in the Philippines; for these islands, like the other colonies of Spain, were affected by the policy at Madrid. A provisional government, created after the flight of Isabella, declared that the reforms soon to be inaugurated in Spain would be extended to the colonies. Those reforms were "universal suffrage, liberty of conscience, of the press, of associations and public meeting."

**The opening of the Suez Canal.** In 1869 the Suez Canal, connecting the Red Sea with the Mediterranean, was thrown open to navigation. The completion of this canal was of great importance to the Philippines, because it shortened the sailing distance between the Islands and Spain. Before this, ships coming from Europe had to sail down the western coast of Africa, double the Cape of Good Hope, and then proceed to the Philippines. This was a long and weary voyage, and the Spanish ships were often lost, or attacked by the Portuguese and the Dutch. But by way of the Suez Canal a steamer leaving Barcelona could reach the Islands in thirty days. This shortening of the route stimulated commerce between Europe and the Orient, and this



ISABELLA II OF SPAIN

Isabella's downfall marked the triumph of liberalism

commerce stimulated agriculture in the Islands. Moreover, it brought the Philippines into closer touch with the ways, the thoughts, and the institutions of Europe.

**Carlos de la Torre, 1869-1871.** The reforms inaugurated in Spain were not all extended to the Philippines; but a liberal governor-general, Carlos de la Torre, was sent to rule the Islands. Governor la Torre was a democrat. He believed in simplicity. He dressed in civilian's clothes, and



avoided luxury and pomp. He dismissed the governor's bodyguard of halberdiers, and rode out alone in the streets. He treated Filipinos and Spaniards alike; for he believed that the two peoples should be equal before the law. He tried to create a bond of attachment between Spain and the Philippines. No previous governor had based his rule on such liberal, democratic ideas as controlled the administration of la Torre.

**The Spanish liberals.** For some years there had been living in the Philippines a few liberal Spaniards who had come to the Islands as political exiles. These liberals were delighted with the policy of the new governor. They had always been in favor of a liberal policy toward the Filipinos, and had often encouraged the natives to demand their rights. More recently, however, they had remained quiet, because their activities were watched by the government. But now, under the liberal government of Carlos de la Torre, they began to be more active and to spread their political beliefs.

**La Torre's attitude toward the Filipinos.** The question of land rights had been a source of trouble between the friars and the farmers as far back as the beginning of the seventeenth century. More than two hundred and fifty years before la Torre's time Chief Miguel Banal, of Quiapo, wrote a letter of protest to the king, requesting him to order the friars not to molest him in his ancient land possessions. The same question of land rights came up again in 1738, in a controversy in Santa Cruz, in Manila. In this controversy it was proved that the religious orders collected rent not only for the fields, but for the house plots and the cost of a bridge. A few years later, during the rule of Gaspar de la Torre, the natives of Balayan, Lian, Nasugbu, and Taal

rose in rebellion against the unjust claims and exactions of the friars. About 1822 Luis Parang, with his followers and sympathizers in Cavite, Batangas, Laguna, and Bulacan, took up arms against the same abuses. The real cause of this uprising was simply the old question of land rights.



A COURT ROOM IN THE MALACAÑAN PALACE, IN MANILA

In the middle of the nineteenth century Eduardo Camerino, a native of Cavite, championed the same cause. Camerino was the leader of a band which gave the government forces a great deal of trouble. In reality Camerino's followers were former landowners and land tenants, who had taken refuge in the mountains as a result of the unjust dealings of the friars in their administration of the land.

Governor la Torre desired to put an end to these disturbances. His manner of doing this is an illustration of his liberal attitude toward the Filipinos. The followers of Camerino, like the followers of Luis Parang, had degenerated into bandits. Nevertheless the governor thought it best to adopt a liberal policy toward these men, and to attach them to the government rather than to persecute them. He pardoned Camerino and those of his followers who laid down their arms. Then he created a police force called the *Guias de Torre*, and made Camerino its commander.

**The governor's reception.** The liberal and democratic policy of the governor was shown in a decided manner at the reception he gave to celebrate the Revolution of 1868. At that reception the people of Manila saw strange scenes and heard strange words, which, under former governors, would have been considered almost treasonable. Colonel Sánchez's wife, who was called the mother of the Filipinos, because of her kindness toward them, received the governor's guests. She was conspicuous with a red ribbon about her hair, on which was written, "Long live the Sovereign People"; she wore a red tie also, one end of which bore the words "Long live Liberty," and the other end "Long live General Torre." Another event of the evening was a procession which marched to the governor's palace led by Doctor José Burgos, Máximo Paterno, Joaquín Pardo de Tavera, and other prominent Filipinos.

**Filipino reformers.** These occurrences delighted the Filipinos. After years of disappointment, they thought that at last the long-expected day, the day of equality and justice, had come. Democratic ideas were in the air. For the first time, perhaps, a Filipino party arose. Although no definite

organization was attempted, yet these men worked and planned for the removal of abuses. Among the most conspicuous of these early reformers were Joaquín Pardo de Tavera, Antonio Regidor, Máximo Paterno, and José María Basa.

*The Filipino clergy.* This cry for reform had its religious as well as its political aspect. As related in previous chapters, Governor Raon and Governor Anda had increased the number of parishes under secular priests, who were usually Filipinos. But in 1826 a royal decree ordered that the secularization of the parishes should stop, and that they should be restored to the regular clergy. The parishes that had been secularized were not all returned immediately to the regular priests. However, in 1849 more of them were restored; and in 1859, when the Jesuits returned, the Recollects were withdrawn from Mindanao and put in charge of the parishes in Central Luzon, although these parishes had been administered for years by Filipino seculars. This persistent removal of the secular clergy, who were mostly Filipino priests, was much resented by them. In the course of time a movement arose, under the leadership of Doctor Burgos and Father Feliciano Gómez, two Filipino priests, in favor of the Filipinization of the parishes. This movement resulted in widening the gulf between Filipino and Spanish priests.

**The opposition.** The new freedom delighted the Filipinos and the few liberal Spaniards in Manila, but was resented and opposed by the majority of the Spanish population. These conservative Spaniards believed that a liberal in the colony was equivalent to a rebel. Moreover, they maintained that the Filipinos were an ignorant race and not deserving of such liberties. The friars were among the foremost in the



ranks of those who raised their voices in opposition to the reforms. They believed that these reforms were antagonistic to the interests of the church and of Spain. The charges made against the Filipino liberals were much the same as those made against the liberals in Spain; that is, they were accused, among other things, of atheism, heresy, and freemasonry.

#### THE MONARCHICAL GOVERNMENT OF SPAIN SENDS A REACTIONARY GOVERNOR, AND REVOLTS AND REVOLUTIONARY IDEAS RESULT

**The policy of Izquierdo.** Meanwhile great changes had again taken place in Spain. A new constitution was promulgated, in June, 1869. The Cortes favored the establishment of a limited monarchy. Toward the end of the following year, the second son of the king of Italy was proclaimed king of Spain as Amadeo I. Once more the despotic rule of kings and nobles was popular in Spain. There was no longer much talk about liberal laws, to give the people more power in the government and more rights in other ways. As a result of this change of ideas, Rafael de Izquierdo, a man representing the restored despotism, was sent to rule the Philippines. Governor Izquierdo was very different from la Torre. He conducted himself in the same haughty and pompous way as nearly all the governors of the Philippines had done. He tried to suppress the rising tide of liberal ideas. This aroused the antagonism of the disappointed Filipinos, and some of them began to conspire against Spain.

**The Cavite Revolt of 1872.** The Filipino soldiers in Fort Cavite had planned a revolt with their fellow soldiers in Manila. They agreed that on the night of the twentieth of January,

1872, they would start an uprising in the two forts. Rockets were to be fired from the walls of the city as a signal to the soldiers in Cavite. The Manila troops failed to carry out the plan. But fireworks which were lighted in a fiesta in Sampaloc were mistaken as the signal. Two hundred soldiers in Cavite, under the leadership of Lamadrid, a



FORT GUADALUPE, IN CAVITE

Filipino sergeant, rose in rebellion and attacked the officers of the garrison. Several of the Spaniards were killed ; but soldiers soon came from Manila and suppressed the revolt.

*The causes.* It was believed by some that this revolt was brought about by the Spanish friars, to implicate some of the Filipino priests who were foremost in demanding the Filipinization of the parishes. It was said that a Franciscan monk dressed himself as Father Burgos and roused the people of Cavite to rebel against Spain. Others believed

that the rebellion was the work of the Filipino priests, who were jealous of the Spanish regulars. Whatever the immediate cause of the revolt was, there is no doubt that it was an expression of general ill feeling, especially against the friars.

**The results.** Many prominent Filipinos who had advocated reforms under the liberal rule of Governor la Torre were arrested. Among the number were the priests José Burgos, Feliciano Gómez, Jacinto Zamora, Mariano Gómez, and Agustín Mendoza; the lawyers Joaquín Pardo de Tavera, Antonio Regidor, Bartolomé Serra, and Pedro Carrillo; and many other influential men, among whom were José María Basa, Mariano Inocencio, and Crisanto de los Reyes. Besides those arrested, many Filipinos were suspected of being connected with the plot, and their correspondence was intercepted. Among those suspected were Florentino Torres, Ambrosio Bautista, and Ángel Garchitorena. A council of war condemned some of these men to death, and others to imprisonment and exile.

**Doctor José Burgos.** Among the most influential and able of these men was Doctor José Burgos, a native of Vigan, in Ilocos Sur. Doctor Burgos was educated in Manila, where he studied theology and philosophy. He was recognized as a man of learning, and was the author of several articles and pamphlets defending the Filipino clergy. At the time of the Cavite Revolt he was parish priest of San Pedro, in Manila, and a curate of the Cathedral.

*The execution of Burgos, Gómez, and Zamora.* On the fifteenth of February the death sentence was pronounced on the three Filipino priests Burgos, Gómez, and Zamora. Father Gómez was parish priest of Bacoar, in Cavite. Father

Zamora, like Burgos, was one of the curates of the Cathedral. On account of their liberal ideas, and of their advocacy of reforms, they had long been suspected of disloyalty. Their ability and influence had aroused the jealousy of the friars. On the morning of the seventeenth of February the three priests were executed by the garrote, on the field of Bagumbayan.

*The effect of their execution.*

To the last, Burgos, Gómez, and Zamora declared that they were innocent. The people believed them. The archbishop of Manila refused to unfrock them before execution, which showed that he doubted their guilt. Their trial was shrouded with mystery. The government never made public the proofs against them. By the Filipinos, therefore, they were regarded as the victims of some underhand

plot. They were acclaimed as martyrs, and the cause which they advocated was henceforth championed by the people.

**Summary.** As a result of the Spanish Revolution of 1868, a liberal governor was sent to rule the Philippines. Governor la Torre sympathized with the Spanish and Filipino liberals, and listened to their demands. He treated Filipinos and Spaniards alike, and tried to establish a feeling of good will between the government and the people. The educated Filipinos took advantage of this opportunity



DOCTOR JOSÉ BURGOS

An able Filipino priest who was  
executed as a result of the Cavite  
Revolt of 1872



and started a movement for reforms. This movement had many opponents. Governor Izquierdo suppressed it, and thus provoked resentment among the Filipino leaders. The troubles culminated in 1872, in the Cavite Revolt, which resulted in the execution of three prominent Filipino priests, Burgos, Gómez, and Zamora.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. How long did the liberal government last in Spain? in the Philippines?
2. What was the attitude of la Torre toward the Filipinos and the Filipino liberals?
3. Name two classes of people in the Philippines who were opposed to la Torre's attitude toward the Filipino liberals.
4. Tell about the Cavite Revolt and its results.
5. Name six or more prominent Filipinos of this time, and explain the part that each took in the events of the period.
6. Give the dates of the following events: the Spanish Revolution, the Cavite Revolt.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The effect of the Suez Canal on commerce between the Philippines and Europe; on our relation with the government of Spain; on the introduction of modern ideas into the Philippines.
2. The character of la Torre compared with that of Izquierdo.
3. The removal of the Filipino clergy.

## CHAPTER XX

### THE REFORM MOVEMENT

#### ENFORCED PEACE, PROSPERITY, AND PARTIAL REFORMS

**The enforced peace.** After 1872 the agitation for reforms stopped for some years. The summary arrests and executions which immediately followed the Cavite Revolt filled the hearts of the Filipinos with terror, and for a while nobody dared rise against authority. The confidence between the Spaniards and the Filipinos daily grew less, and the mutual distrust increased. The country had peace, but it was a peace maintained by force of arms. Soldiers were sent to the Islands from Spain to replace the Filipino troops. In these years the Filipinos began to prepare for an uprising such as the country had never known before.

**Growth of commerce.** Peace is a condition necessary for the growth of commerce. The twenty years following the Cavite Revolt made it possible for the commercial situation in the Philippines to be improved in many ways. There were changes which made transportation and communication better. The event which was of greatest benefit was the opening of the Suez Canal, in 1869. This aided in the commercial development; for the shortening of the route made the transportation of Philippine products to European markets quicker and cheaper. Foreign shipping increased, and in 1874 two new ports, Legaspi and Tacloban, were

thrown open to commerce. The establishment of telegraph lines, in 1873, brought some parts of the Islands into closer communication. In 1890 the first telephone was installed. The following year marked the opening of the first railroad line, from Manila to Dagupan.

**A revival of agitation.** Beneath this prosperity and outward calm were unrest and a spirit of rebellion. True, up to 1896 no armed revolt took place in the Islands, but from about 1880 the advocates of reform began once more to spread their doctrines. The agitation at this time was carried on directly against the religious orders, and had to do largely with the old question of land ownership. Numerous cases of land troubles occurred, the most famous of which was that of Calamba, which began in 1887. The people of Calamba believed that they had a right to the land claimed by the friars. They were defeated in the courts, however, and were finally evicted from their farms. Soldiers having been sent by Governor Weyler to carry out this decision, rather serious trouble arose. To keep down the general agitation, the government made numerous arrests and imprisonments, and granted some reforms.

**The reform in taxation.** Soon after the Spanish conquest, every male inhabitant of the Archipelago was obliged to pay to the government a tribute of from one to one and a half pesos. In addition to the payment of the tribute every male inhabitant, unless he was one of the principales, or principal men, was subject to forty days' labor on public works. In 1884 the payment of tribute was abolished; but all residents of the Islands, both male and female, between the ages of twenty-five and sixty, were required to purchase from the government a paper of identification called *cedula*

personal. The cost of the cedula varied according to the social standing of the purchasers. Both Filipinos and foreigners were obliged to purchase these papers of identification, which were in reality a sort of poll tax. The number of days of compulsory labor was reduced from forty to fifteen,



A TRAIN ON THE MANILA AND DAGUPAN RAILROAD

The first line built in the Philippines

which greatly relieved the poor. Although everybody was subject to the labor law, he could secure exemption by paying a certain sum of money, or by purchasing a high-class cedula. Foreigners and Filipinos who could afford it bought this exemption.

**Reforms in local government.** There were reforms introduced in connection with the courts, the local government,



and the laws. In 1886 Filipino justices of the peace were appointed. The provincial governments were reorganized; a governor was appointed who was vested with all executive power. The *alcalde mayor* retained his judicial powers only.

In 1887 the Spanish Penal Code, the Code of Commerce, and the Civil Code were revised and introduced into the Philippines. On account of the bitter opposition of the religious orders some provisions of the Civil Code, such as civil marriage and registration, were not adopted.

#### AGITATION FOR THOROUGH REFORM

**Other reforms desired.** These reforms, although beneficial, did not satisfy the Filipinos; for they did not remove all the objectionable features of the administration. Improvement in government did not keep pace with the progress of the people. Corrupt officials were still being sent to the Philippines, and sometimes in such great numbers that offices had to be created for them. Many of these officials came with no other purpose than to amass wealth. The religious orders still wielded tremendous political power. The Filipinos were still excluded from occupying high government posts. The burden of taxation still weighed on the poor. Individual freedom was still a thing unknown. Race prejudice still remained. For these and many other reasons the Filipino leaders continued their agitation, and this gradually assumed large proportions. In 1888 a petition was sent to the queen of Spain asking for the expulsion of the religious orders. This petition bore eight hundred signatures, and indicated clearly the temper of the Filipino people.

**The reform movement.** There gradually developed in the Philippines a systematic movement to secure a more just

government. This was not an uprising of the people, or a revolt ; it was an effort of educated Filipinos to make the wrongs so apparent that Spain must understand and make changes. The leaders of this movement were for the most part Filipinos living either as students or as exiles in Spain and France. They organized societies in Madrid, Barcelona, and Paris. They wrote and published articles and pamphlets, describing the bad conditions and abuses in the Philippines, and pointing out ways for improvement. Among the most prominent of these reformers were José Rizal, Marcelo H. del Pilar, Mariano Ponce, Graciano López-Jaena, and the brothers Juan and Antonio Luna.

*What the reformers wanted.* If these reformers are to be judged from their writings, they were moderate in their demands. Without doubt a few of the leaders had in mind, even at this time, the idea of a separation from Spain, although they never openly advocated such a radical step. By far the larger part of this group of reformers declared their loyalty to Spain, but urged changes that would aid in the advancement of the Filipino people. They asked, among other reforms, that the Filipinos be allowed to send deputies to the Spanish Cortes ; that they be granted such laws as would further their progress ; that they be given greater personal freedom ; and that the friars be withdrawn from the parishes. They asked that the Islands be assimilated with Spain, that is, be considered as a province of the nation.

*José Rizal.* Of these reformers the most noted and the best beloved by the Filipinos, and the one that time has proved to be by far the wisest, was Doctor José Rizal. Rizal was born in the little town of Calamba, in the province of Laguna, on the nineteenth of June, 1861. He belonged

to a family of some means and of good standing, among whose members were lawyers, priests, and *alcaldes*. As a child, he learned his first lessons from his mother. At the age of nine he went to study in the school of Justiniano Aquino Cruz, in the neighboring town of Biñan. Afterwards he studied in the Jesuits' College and in the University of Santo Tomás, in Manila. Then he went to Spain and entered the Central University of Madrid, taking the courses in medicine and in philosophy. After securing his degrees in these subjects, he visited France, England, and Germany.

Rizal was a man of wide learning. He was a skillful surgeon, a scientist, a poet, a novelist, a sculptor, and a linguist. He spoke not only various Philippine dialects, but Spanish, French, Italian, English, German, and Japanese. He kept his diary in different languages, and in some of his letters he changed from German to English and then to French without any apparent effort.

From early childhood Rizal was thoughtful and impressionable. While young, he took to heart the unfortunate conditions of his native town. When grown to manhood, he wrote that as a boy he used to pass many sad hours on the bank of Laguna de Bay, lost in thought, wondering what was on the opposite shore, and whether the people there were also cruelly tortured by the civil guard and terrorized by the outlaws. These serious thoughts of his lonesome, meditative hours of boyhood, Rizal, when a man, expressed in his books.

*Rizal's novels.* While Rizal was in Europe, he wrote two important novels, "Noli Me Tangere" and "El filibusterismo." These novels describe the distressing conditions

of the Philippines in Rizal's time. They also point out the many faults of the government, and show the grave abuses connected with the clergy. In these books Rizal tells the Filipinos to strive for education, to raise their standards of morality and culture, to learn to be self-dependent, to think for themselves, and to become more united. He urges Spain to reform her government in the Philippines, and points out that unless this is done, the Filipinos may some day rise against her. The circulation of these novels in the Philippines was prohibited by the government; nevertheless they found their way into many Filipino homes.

*Marcelo H. del Pilar.* Another prominent reformer was Marcelo H. del Pilar. He was born in the province of Bulacan. For his education he went to the University of Santo Tomás.

Before the year 1888 he was identified, in his native province, with a small group of advocates of reform. Afterwards, when he was obliged to leave the Islands, he went to Spain, and there joined the other Filipinos who were working for reforms. He was bitter to the religious orders, and it was against them that most of his writings were directed. In the early years of his work for improving conditions in the Philippines, he advocated the plan of making the Islands a province of Spain. Later, however, he gave up the hope



MARCELO H. DEL PILAR, A  
LEADING FILIPINO REFORMER



of securing any reforms by peaceful means, and so began advocating the more radical measure of resorting to arms.

*The Spanish-Filipino Association.* In 1888 the Filipinos in Spain, with the coöperation of a few Spaniards, founded an association in Madrid for the purpose of promoting reforms in



GRACIANO LÓPEZ-JAENA

A Filipino reformer and founder of La Solidaridad

the Islands. The society was called the Spanish-Filipino Association. The society had among its members José Rizal, Marcelo H. del Pilar, Mariano Ponce, Galicano Apacible, and José Ma. Panganiban. The association met every month. It drew up petitions and passed resolutions with a view to reforming the existing conditions. According to Antonio Luna the ideals of the association were to make the Filipino a free man; to transform the slave into a citizen; to grant to the inhabitant, who had so long suffered from

the exploitation of the greedy, the privileges and rights of a Spanish citizen; to transform an oppressed colony into a rich and flourishing province of Spain.

*La Solidaridad.* Most of the writings of these reformers were printed in La Solidaridad, a fortnightly publication established in Barcelona, in 1888, by Graciano López-Jaena. This periodical was afterwards bought by del Pilar, and

transferred to Madrid. In it were published not only the articles of the Filipino reformers, but the transactions of the Spanish-Filipino Association. *La Solidaridad* was prohibited by the Philippine government, but, like Rizal's novels, copies of it reached many Filipino homes, through secret channels.



MONUMENT TO RIZAL AT DAPITAN, WHERE HE LIVED IN EXILE

*La Liga Filipina.* In June, 1892, Rizal returned to the Philippines for the second time, after staying in Hongkong for a few months on his way home. While he was in Hongkong, he used his spare time in drafting the constitution of a Filipino association, which he planned to organize in Manila. He called the association *La Liga Filipina*. On the night of his landing in Manila, he began the work of organization, but it was not until the third of July that the association was formally established. Rizal's enemies thought

that this was another attempt to overthrow Spanish authority, but in reality the association had no revolutionary aims. According to its constitution the purposes of the society were as follows :

1. The union of the whole Archipelago into one compact, vigorous, and homogeneous body.
2. Mutual protection in every want and necessity.
3. Defense against violence and injustice.
4. The encouragement of instruction, agriculture, and commerce.
5. Study and application.

Nevertheless, the organization of La Liga Filipina was used as one of the main reasons for Rizal's arrest and imprisonment.

**Late attempts at reform.** As a result of the work of the reformers, Spain granted some changes. In 1893 the **Maura** Laws were passed. These were for the reorganization of the municipal governments. The government of the municipality was vested in a president and four lieutenants. The five men were the officers of the administration. They were chosen by a board of twelve delegates, whom they consulted on important matters. The twelve delegates were in turn elected by the ballots of the *principales*, or principal men. The *principales* consisted of those who had held office or who were paying a land tax of fifty pesos.

This reform was wise and liberal, but it came too late. The ideas circulated in the Islands by the writings of the reformers had already influenced large numbers of Filipinos ; for the few who read told to others what they had read. Every year there was more and more discussion among the people about their wrongs and their rights. As a result, the

masses of the Filipinos had come to believe that the day was at hand for more radical steps.

**Summary.** The oppressive policy of the governors who followed la Torre restored peace in the Islands, but only by force of arms. Agitation began again. It was carried on by able Filipino reformers in Barcelona, Madrid, and Paris. These reformers established associations, and printed articles, pamphlets, and books. By far the most prominent of these reformers were José Rizal and Marcelo H. del Pilar. As a result of their work, Spain granted further reforms, as she had done before. But the reforms came too late; the masses were already stirred up, and were secretly advocating violent measures.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. What was the chief cause of prosperity during this period? Name three other causes.
2. Name and explain four reforms of this period.
3. Name five defects of the government that were not remedied.
4. Who was the most important advocate of reforms? How did he try to secure the reforms? Name some other reformers, and tell the steps they took to bring about reforms.
5. What were the five most important reforms urged by the reformers?
6. What was the Spanish-Filipino Association? La Solidaridad? La Liga Filipina?
7. What were the Maura Laws? Why did these laws not satisfy the reformers?

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. Review the history of Filipino representation in the Cortes.
2. The story of "Noli Me Tangere." The story of "El filibusterismo."
3. The character of del Pilar.



## CHAPTER XXI

### THE PHILIPPINE REVOLUTION

#### SECRET PLANS FOR REVOLUTION

**The Katipunan.** The spread of the teachings and writings of the workers for reforms in the Philippines began to show results in the last decade of the nineteenth century. Large numbers of Filipinos, particularly in Manila and the surrounding provinces, had been influenced and were prepared for radical action. The liberties which their leaders had failed to obtain through peaceful means, they now proposed to secure by force of arms. To do this, organization was necessary. Open organization was impossible ; for organization of any kind was forbidden. Therefore a secret society was formed, called the Most High and Most Venerable Association of the Sons of the Nation, but popularly known as the Katipunan, or Association. It was organized in July, 1892, in a house in Calle Azcárraga. Rizal, without his knowledge, was elected the honorary president.

The meetings of the Katipunan were held in secret. At first not even the members were supposed to know each other. Its ceremonies were patterned after Masonic rites. To become a member, the candidate signed an oath, in the name of his God and of his native land, declaring that he would support the aims of the society, keep its secrets, implicitly obey its laws, and aid any of its members who were in danger. The signature was written with the blood

of the signer. Each member adopted an assumed name, such as Thunder, Day, Brave, Earthquake.

The object of the Katipunan was primarily to work for the independence of the Archipelago. However, it had many teachings, or precepts, among which were the following :

1. There should be equality among all men.
2. The oppressed should be aided ; the oppressor should be resisted.
3. Womanhood should be respected.
4. A man should conduct himself with dignity, and keep his word ; he should not oppress anybody, nor allow himself to be oppressed ; he should work for the freedom of his native land : the greatness of man lies in these things and in no other.

At first the society led an inactive life. By 1894, however, it had a rather large membership, including some women. It had a regularly elected president, secretary, treasurer, and fiscal. Local committees, or centers, called popular councils, were organized in various places in Manila. These local centers later extended the work to the neighboring provinces.

*Andrés Bonifacio.* The founder of the Katipunan was Andrés Bonifacio. This patriot was born in Tondo, on the thirtieth of November, 1863. His family was poor. At the age of fourteen he was left an orphan, with two brothers and a sister depending on him for support. Under such adverse circumstances he had little time for study ; while yet a boy, he was doing a man's work. He became an employee in the foreign business house of Fressell and Company. He devoted his spare hours to reading. His favorite subject was the French Revolution. It was from

his reading so much about this period of French history that he came to think of establishing the Katipunan. On the sixth of July, 1892, the day that Rizal was imprisoned in Fort Santiago, Bonifacio, with Deodato Arellano, Valentin Díaz Ladislao Diwa, and some others, founded the association. For a time Bonifacio was the soul of the organization.



ANDRÉS BONIFACIO, FOUNDER  
OF THE KATIPUNAN

*The discovery.* The Katipunan was in existence four years before the government authorities found it out. Early in July, 1896, a rumor reached the ears of some of the government officials that a large secret organization was planning a rebellion. The rumor made the Spaniards uneasy, and they began to investigate it; but they obtained no definite information until the nineteenth of August. On that day Teodoro Patiño, a member of the society, betrayed the secret to his sister, a student

in the Augustinian college for girls, in Mandaloyon. He was advised by his sister, and by the nun who was present when he told the secret, to give the information to Father Gil, the curate of Tondo. He went to Father Gil, and among many other things told him that a lithographic stone used by the members of the Katipunan for printing their receipts was hidden in the printing establishment of the *Diario de Manila*. Father Gil decided to investigate the

matter personally. On that same evening he went to the office of the *Diario de Manila* and after a half hour's search found the lithographic stone and some of the stubs of the receipts.



MONUMENT AT BALINTAUAC, COMMEMORATING THE BEGINNING OF  
THE REVOLUTION OF 1896

The governor-general of the Philippines at this time was Ramón Blanco, a kind and just man. He believed in liberal ideas, and for this reason was disliked by those in the Islands who approved of the old way of governing. He desired to attach the Filipinos to Spain by ties of affection, and was opposed to any violence. When Father Gil announced that



he had discovered a large association conspiring against Spain, Blanco appeared to be the only cool-headed man in Manila.

• **A period of terror.** But even Blanco could not restrain the rabid element of the Spanish population, who believed in the subjugation of the Filipinos. Bitter denunciations were made in every quarter. Harsh words were said against the governor. The whole city was in confusion. Immediately after the discovery of the Katipunan forty-three arrests were made in Manila. Every Filipino, whether connected with the association or not, feared for his safety. It was a period of terror in the capital. By the last week of August as many as three hundred men were under arrest. During the month of September many more were arrested, and thirty-seven were executed. The month of December saw more executions, the most tragic of all being that of Rizal, who had no connection with the Katipunan.

#### THE REVOLUTION OF 1896

**The beginning of the Revolution.** Bonifacio and his fellow workers fled from Manila, and began the organization of their forces. On the seventeenth of August the Katipunan had decided to revolt against the Spanish government. Three days later the society met in Balintauac, and with the shout "Long live the Philippine Republic" set the thirtieth day of August for the general uprising. But on account of the discovery made by Father Gil on the evening of the nineteenth of August, Bonifacio decided to begin hostilities at an earlier date. On the twenty-sixth of August the Filipinos attacked the town of Caloocan. Four days later they fought in Balintauac and San Juan del Monte. At the latter place they lost many men.

In spite of their great loss at San Juan del Monte, the rebels did not become discouraged. Their number increased.



EMILIO AGUINALDO

A general of the Filipino Revolutionary army, and president of the Republic

The summary arrests made, and the cruel tortures inflicted on the suspects, caused many who had hitherto been loyal to Spain to join in the common cause against the government.

The rebellion spread to the provinces of Cavite, Batangas, Laguna, Morong, Bulacan, and Pampanga. Later, provinces farther away from Manila, such as Zambales, Tarlac, Nueva Ecija, Pangasinan, Union, and Ilocos, organized insurgent



FOUNTAIN BUILT BY RIZAL  
DURING HIS EXILE AT  
DAPITAN

forces. Several brave leaders came into prominence, among whom were Emilio Aguinaldo, Miguel Malvar, Mamerto Natividad, Pio del Pilar, and Llanera.

*Emilio Aguinaldo.* In a short time Aguinaldo became the recognized leader of the rebellion. He was born in the town of Cavite, in March, 1869. He obtained his early education in his native town. Later he studied a few years in the College of San Juan de Letran, in Manila. On leaving college, he returned to Cavite and engaged in farming. Because of his ability and extraordinary force of character, he soon rose to local prominence, and was made municipal captain of his town.

In 1894 he became a member of the Katipunan, and when the rebellion began, he was among the first to take up arms. His bravery and determination won the admiration of his comrades, and he soon became their recognized commander. From that time Cavite became the center of the rebellion. It was an uprising the like of which had never before been known in the history of the Islands.

*The execution of Rizal.* On the thirteenth of December, 1896, Camilo G. de Polavieja became governor-general of the Philippines. During his short rule he committed many cruel deeds in the name of the sovereign nation. On the day after he assumed control of the government, he summarily executed several Filipinos of the province of Tarlac. A little later ten prominent Filipinos from the provinces of Bicol met the same fate. But the most infamous of all the acts that were committed by this governor-general was the execution of Rizal.

Doctor José Rizal had been banished, and had lived four years as an exile in Dapitan, in Mindanao. But soon the great man became weary of his inactive life in the little town, and asked the government to allow him to go to Cuba as a surgeon in the Spanish hospitals. Blanco, who was then governor, granted his request, and permitted him to return to Manila, where he was to take a steamer to Cuba by way of Spain. But unfortunately Rizal reached Manila about two weeks before Father Gil made his discovery. Governor Blanco was convinced that Rizal had nothing to do with the Katipunan, and after about a month's delay allowed him to start on his trip. Rizal's enemies, however, used every means within their power to implicate him in the uprising. They sent a message by cable to Spain. As a result of this intriguing, Rizal was imprisoned on his arrival in Spain, and was soon sent back to Manila. One more innocent man fell into the hands of Polavieja. Rizal was tried by a court-martial for sedition and rebellion. After a mock trial he was condemned to death. In the early morning of the thirtieth of December, 1896, he was taken to the Luneta and shot.



On the eve of his execution Rizal wrote a farewell poem, addressed to his country. From this poem the following stanza is taken :

I die while dawn's rich iris hues are staining yet the sky,  
Heralds of the freer day still hidden from our view  
Behind the night's dark mantle. And should the morning nigh  
Need crimson, shed my heart's blood quickly, freely let it dye  
The newborn light with the glory of its ensanguined hue.

*The effect of Rizal's death.* Rizal was not a traitor to Spain. His execution was the result of the intrigues of his enemies. He was a martyr to the cause of freedom. Several times he could have escaped from the clutches of Spanish tyranny, but he preferred to stand trial. Knowing his innocence, he held fast to the belief that justice would be done. He was betrayed. As a result of his execution, the revolutionists became more determined than ever to carry on the fight. Even the distant provinces took up arms.

**Polavieja's campaign.** Early in 1897 Governor-general Polavieja, at the head of about twenty-eight thousand men, took the field against the insurrectionists. He tried to put down the rebellion in Bulacan, Morong, and Cavite. He fought many pitched battles. In Cavite his army was aided by the Spanish squadron. Here, after about three months of hard campaigning, he defeated with heavy loss the forces of Aguinaldo, who had once driven the Spaniards out of the province.

**The policy of Primo de Rivera.** In April, 1897, Primo de Rivera, who had been governor of the Philippines from 1880 to 1883, returned to rule the Islands for the second time. Spain was beginning to feel the drain of war, for a



MONUMENT TO RIZAL, IN MANILA

widespread rebellion had broken out in Cuba a year before the uprising in the Philippines. The new governor tried to make peace. He offered pardon to all who would lay

down their arms. Although many Filipinos took advantage of this amnesty, many more chose to continue the struggle.

Rivera became convinced that drastic measures were necessary. He commanded in person the Spanish forces operating in Cavite. He attacked the towns of Indang, Naic, Alfonso, Maragondon, Mendez Núñez, and others.



PEDRO A. PATERNO, NEGOTIATOR  
OF THE PACT OF BIACNABATO

At the same time he sent General Monet to Zambales and Pangasinan, and had General Núñez conduct the campaign in Nueva Ecija. In these campaigns many brave men, both Spaniards and Filipinos, gave up their lives. Finally Aguinaldo and his staff withdrew to the mountains of Bulacan.

**Aguinaldo's proclamation of independence.** From Biacnabato, in the province of Bulacan, Aguinaldo issued a proclamation declaring that the Filipinos desired to be

free and independent. This proclamation was translated into English, French, and Visayan. It said that the Filipinos had long been deprived of their freedom, but that now they were going to show the world their ability to form an independent government of their own.

**The Pact of Biacnabato.** Both sides, however, were beginning to feel the exhaustion of the war. The Spaniards had made overtures for peace, but without success. On the

fourth of August, 1897, Pedro A. Paterno, a distinguished Filipino of Manila who had been educated in Spain, offered his services to Governor-general Rivera as a mediator. He was permitted to leave Manila and interview the revolutionary leaders. His efforts were successful, and on the fourteenth of December he obtained an agreement which is now called the Pact of Biacnabato.

Little is known regarding this agreement. Governor-general Rivera denied that he had made any promises for reforms. However, there is no doubt that the Filipino leaders agreed to lay down their arms and go into exile, believing that Spain had agreed to their demands, which were as follows :

1. The expulsion of the religious orders.
2. Philippine representation in the Spanish Cortes.
3. The equal treatment of Filipinos and Spaniards in the application of justice.
4. The employment of Filipinos in the high posts of the government service.
5. The liberty of the press, and the right to form associations.
6. The payment by the Spanish government of the sum of three million pesos, as an indemnity to those who had lost property during the war, to widows and orphans, and to the leaders of the rebellion who were to live in exile. This sum was finally reduced to eight hundred thousand pesos.

**Peace restored.** On the sixteenth of December, 1897, Aguinaldo proclaimed the restoration of peace. A week later he and forty other insurgent leaders left for Calumpit, and from there went to Dagupan. They reached the port of Sual early in the morning of the twenty-seventh of



December, and on the same day embarked for Hongkong. Other Filipino generals remained in the Islands to see that the Filipino part of the agreement was fulfilled.

#### THE REVOLUTION, AND THE COMING OF THE AMERICANS

**Fresh grievances against Spain.** The Filipinos fulfilled their part of the Pact of Biacnabato, with the expectation that Spain would do the same. But they were disappointed in this. Only a part of the promised indemnity was ever paid. Many Filipinos who had laid down their arms were imprisoned and executed, instead of being pardoned. The promised reforms were not made. The old policy of unwarranted arrest and arbitrary punishment was continued. The Filipinos felt that the pledges made by Spain could not be relied on. So they prepared to renew the war. The provinces of Bulacan, Pampanga, Tarlac, Nueva Ecija, Zambales, Union, Ilocos Sur, and even Camarines again revolted. In April, 1898, about six thousand Filipinos suddenly attacked the Spanish forces in Cebu. The people of Panay and Bohol also showed signs of restlessness. The revolution was just at the beginning of its second outbreak when the Americans unexpectedly came to the Philippines.

**The coming of the Americans.** The policy of Spain in ruling her colonies in the other parts of the world was as unwise as in the Philippines. For years the people of Cuba, like the people of the Philippines, had been tyrannized over by corrupt officials. In 1895 the last of a long series of rebellions broke out in Cuba. War was waged with bitterness and cruelty on both sides. Foreign capital invested in Cuba, especially American capital, suffered great losses. The

Spanish government was unable to prevent the numerous abuses that were committed against the interests of friendly foreign nations. These outrages reached their culmination on the evening of the fifteenth of February, 1898, when the battleship Maine was blown up in the harbor of Havana.



THE AMERICAN FLEET AND THE WRECK OF THE SPANISH WARSHIP  
CASTILLA IN MANILA BAY, MAY, 1898

Although it was not known who was responsible for the explosion, the dastardly act shocked the American people, and popular feeling ran high against Spain. Furthermore, the sympathy of the Americans was with the struggling Cubans. On the twentieth of April the Congress of the United States declared by joint resolution "that the people of Cuba are, and of right ought to be, free and independent."

Congress demanded, also, that Spain surrender her authority over the island. Spain refused to withdraw from Cuba, and the two countries declared war.

On the twenty-fifth of April, Commodore George Dewey, who was at Hongkong, was ordered to "proceed to the Philippine Islands; commence operations at once against Spanish fleet; capture vessels or destroy." On the last day of April, under cover of the darkness, Dewey entered the harbor of Manila with nine ships.

*The battle of Manila Bay.* The next morning, the first day of May, 1898, Dewey attacked the Spanish fleet, which consisted of ten inferior battleships under the command of Admiral Montojo. The fighting lasted about four hours. Dewey destroyed the fleet and silenced the batteries in the fort without losing a single man.

*Commodore Dewey.* George Dewey was born in Vermont, on the twenty-sixth of December, 1837. He graduated from the United States Naval Academy in 1858. He fought in the American Civil War under Admiral Farragut. After the close of the Civil War he served for a while with the European squadron, and then became instructor in the United States Naval Academy. In 1896 he was promoted to the rank of commodore. Because of his brilliant victory in Manila Bay the Secretary of the Navy presented him with a sword of honor. In 1899 he was made "admiral of the navy."

**Dewey and Aguinaldo.** In April, 1898, when the war broke out between Spain and the United States, Aguinaldo was in Singapore, where he had recently gone from Hongkong. He had three interviews with Mr. Spencer Pratt, the American consul general at Singapore. What took place in these interviews is not exactly known; but as a result,

Aguinaldo was to return to the Philippines for the purpose of again taking part in the rebellion against Spain. He went from Singapore to Hongkong. On the sixteenth of May he embarked on the American warship McCulloch, and reached Manila three days later.

#### Renewal of the war.

The destruction of the Spanish fleet in the East opened the eyes of the Spanish authorities to their danger. They now began to realize that Spanish rule in the Islands was seriously threatened. They made an effort to conciliate the Filipinos. They issued proclamations calling on the Filipinos to aid the government against the new enemy. There was formed a consulting body of prominent Filipinos, among whom were Pedro A. Paterno,

Cayetano Arellano, Trinidad H. Pardo de Tavera, and Ariston Bautista. The governor-general promised to listen to the counsels of this body. Again he promised reforms. But the broken promises at Biacnabato were too recent to be forgotten.

Aguinaldo, on landing at Cavite, immediately issued a proclamation to the Filipinos, calling them to arms and



ADMIRAL DEWEY

In command of the American squadron which defeated the Spanish fleet at the battle of Manila Bay



setting the last day of May, 1898, for the general uprising against Spanish authority. Two weeks after his return to the Islands he was again at the head of a large army of Filipinos, who were ready to die for their cause.

**The dictatorship.** On the ~~twenty-fourth of May~~, acting on the advice of Ambrosio Rianzares Bautista, a talented lawyer, Aguinaldo proclaimed an independent Filipino government, with himself as dictator. The dictatorship was created to prepare the country for the establishment of a republic, and to conduct the war.

The war was pushed with great vigor. The Filipinos won several battles. They drove the Spaniards from most of the provinces of Luzon. They threatened Manila. Aguinaldo had ordered that the war should be conducted humanely; but in the heat of passion the Filipinos sometimes retaliated for the cruelties practiced by Spain.

**The Revolutionary Government.** The independence of the Archipelago was solemnly proclaimed on the twelfth of June, 1898, in Cavite, and the Philippine flag was officially unfurled. Decrees were issued regulating the administration of the provinces and municipalities, and calling for the election of representatives to the Revolutionary Congress. On the twenty-third of June the dictatorship was changed to the Revolutionary Government. Aguinaldo was made president. In July a cabinet was organized, composed of a Secretary of War and Public Works, a Secretary of the Interior, and a Secretary of Finance; in September it was reorganized with a membership of fourteen, under the presidency of Cayetano Arellano. The declaration of independence was officially announced at the assembly of the municipal presidentes on the first day of August. Congress assembled on the fifteenth

of September, and on the twenty-ninth ratified the declaration of independence. By this time most of the provinces had acknowledged the authority of the Revolutionary Government, and were ready to fight for freedom.

**The fall of Manila.** Meanwhile the American fleet had been lying in the harbor of Manila, awaiting the arrival of



FORT SAN ANTONIO ABAD, IN MALATE, SHOWING THE EFFECT OF  
THE AMERICAN BOMBARDMENT

forces from the United States. After destroying the Spanish squadron, Dewey remained in the bay in pursuance of orders from Washington. By the end of July about eight thousand five hundred American soldiers had arrived in the Philippines. On the thirteenth of August, 1898, after little resistance, Manila capitulated, and the American forces entered the Walled City. The Filipinos participated in the attack, but were not allowed to enter the city.

After proudly floating over these islands for nearly four hundred years, the flag of Castile was hauled down, and in its place was raised the Stars and Stripes. The rule of Spain in the Philippines was ended.

**The treaty of peace.** A protocol of peace had been signed between Spain and the United States the day before Manila capitulated to the Americans. The peace commissioners of the two countries met in Paris. They could not at first agree as to what should be done with the Philippines. Spain desired to retain the Islands, but the United States asked for their cession. The petitions of the Filipino delegate sent by Aguinaldo, that the Islands be granted independence, were not listened to; for the government he was representing had not yet been recognized by the powers. Finally Spain agreed to cede the Islands to the United States. To compensate her for her loss and for the expenditures she had incurred in the public works and improvements in the Islands, the United States agreed to pay her the sum of twenty million dollars. The treaty was signed on the tenth of December, 1898.

**Summary.** In 1896, wearied by the oppressive rule of Spain, the Filipinos revolted. The revolt was initiated by the members of a secret society called the Katipunan. At first the uprising was confined to Manila and the neighboring districts, but later it spread to distant provinces. The government made several attempts to put down the rebellion. Finally a compromise was reached, and the Pact of Biacnabato was signed. Spain failed to carry out the reforms demanded by the Filipinos, and paid only a part of the promised indemnity. The Filipinos again revolted. About this time the American squadron under Commodore Dewey

entered Manila Bay and destroyed the Spanish fleet. A few weeks later Aguinaldo returned from Hongkong, where he had been living in exile. He placed himself at the head of the rebel forces, and drove the Spaniards from the provinces. He then established an independent Philippine government, in Cavite. Meanwhile eight thousand five hundred American soldiers arrived in the Philippines. On the thirteenth of August they attacked and occupied Manila. By the treaty of peace between Spain and the United States the Philippines were ceded to the United States. Thus Spanish rule in the Philippines ended.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. What was the name of the secret society that began the Revolution? Who was its founder? What was Rizal's connection with this organization? Why did the discovery of this organization cause the Spaniards to be alarmed?

2. Tell the story of the cry of Balintauac; of the spread of the Revolution to the neighboring provinces; of the effect of the execution of Rizal on the Revolution.

3. Why did both Spaniards and Filipinos later desire to end the rebellion? What was the Pact of Biacnabato? State its most important provisions.

4. What caused the rebellion to break out again in 1898?

5. Tell the story of the coming of the Americans. Why did they come to the Philippines at this time? Describe the battle of Manila Bay.

6. Discuss briefly Aguinaldo's dictatorship; the Revolutionary Government.

7. How was Spanish authority in the Philippines finally overthrown?

8. What treaty ended the Spanish-American War? Name the two most important provisions of this treaty touching the Philippines. Why could not the Revolutionary Government of the Philippines be recognized by the peace commissioners in Paris?



## 260 BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

9. Tell about the following men: Blanco, Polavieja, Montojo. Give short biographical sketches of Bonifacio, Aguinaldo, Paterno, and Dewey. Name four other Filipino military leaders besides Aguinaldo.

10. Give the dates of the following events: the organization of the Katipunan, and its discovery; the beginning of the revolution; the execution of Rizal; the Pact of Biacnabato; the formal proclamation of the independence of the Philippines; the battle of Manila Bay; the fall of Manila.

### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. How the Cuban war for independence affected the Revolution in the Philippines.
2. The extent of the authority of the Revolutionary Government.
3. A comparison of the strength of the American and the Spanish fleet.

## CHAPTER XXII

### RELATIONS WITH THE UNITED STATES

#### THE FORMATION OF THE PHILIPPINE REPUBLIC

**Cession of the Philippines to the United States.** The protocol of peace between Spain and the United States was signed on the twelfth of August, 1898. The treaty of peace between the two nations was signed on the tenth of December, 1898, and ratified by the Senate of the United States on the sixth of February, 1899. In this treaty Spain agreed to cede the Philippines to the United States. The governmental authority of the United States over the Philippines, therefore, is based on the Treaty of Paris.

**Intentions of the United States.** When Commodore Dewey entered Manila Bay, he came to destroy the Spanish fleet, not to conquer the Philippines. That the United States should retain the Archipelago was never considered, either by Dewey or by the Filipinos. Indeed, in the summer of 1898 the American people and their government were not particularly interested in the Philippines; for they knew little about the country or its inhabitants. Consequently, neither the fleet nor the army interfered with the activities of President Aguinaldo and the Revolutionary Government.

**The Philippine Republic.** The Filipinos regarded this non-interference on the part of the Americans as a silent approval of their plans for independence. They called the Americans their allies and deliverers. They believed that their

independence was assured. They worked hard, therefore, to perfect the organization of the Filipino government. On the fifteenth of September, 1898, a Filipino Congress assembled, in the church of Barasoain, near Malolos. There were eighty-five delegates, and among them the ablest leaders of the Filipino people. A foreign observer said of these men, "They



FELIPE G. CALDERON, AUTHOR  
OF THE CONSTITUTION

conducted themselves with great decorum, and showed a knowledge of debate and parliamentary law that would not compare unfavorably with the Japanese Parliament."

The first serious task that the Congress undertook was the framing of a constitution for the Philippines. The constitution that was finally adopted was written by Felipe Calderon, an able lawyer of Manila. It was adopted by the Congress on the twenty-ninth of November, 1898, approved by Presi-

dent Aguinaldo on the twenty-third of December, and promulgated by him on the twenty-first of January, 1899. With the proclamation of the Constitution, the Revolutionary Government became the Philippine Republic.

*Filipino political groups.* Well-organized political parties had never existed in the Philippines. The reason for this was that the Filipinos had had little to say regarding the government of the Islands. But when the Revolutionary Government was established, differences of political opinions

and policies led to the formation of groups. There were the Radicals, who advocated independence at any cost; and the Conservatives, who wanted independence if it could be secured without war, but if this was impossible, the most liberal form of government that could be secured by peaceful means. A little later, as a result of the framing of the Constitution, other groups were formed. One group believed in vesting almost unlimited power in the president of the Republic. Another group feared that if the president were given too much power, he might assume control of the other branches of the government also.

*Apolinario Mabini.* Among the men who were in the confidence of Aguinaldo was Apolinario Mabini. He was the private counselor of Aguinaldo, and as such could be credited with many of Aguinaldo's acts. He believed in independence at any cost. He was considered the brains of the Revolution, and was undoubtedly one of the strongest men that the Philippines had ever produced.



APOLINARIO MABINI, A GREAT  
FILIPINO LEADER

Mabini was born in 1864, in the town of Tanauan, in Batangas. His parents were poor, and he found it hard to acquire an education; but through persistence and hard work he succeeded in graduating from the University of



Santo Tomás with a degree in law. Shortly before the Revolution began, Mabini was stricken with paralysis. At the outbreak of the Revolution the government suspected him of complicity in it and arrested him, but later set him free. When Aguinaldo returned from Hongkong, he made Mabini his private counselor, and afterwards appointed him president of his cabinet.

The following quotation from Mabini expresses his idea of the duty of a citizen: "Thou shalt strive for the happiness of thy country before thine own, making of thy country the kingdom of reason, of justice, and of labor; for if thy country be happy, thou, together with thy family, shalt likewise be happy."

#### THE DECISION OF THE UNITED STATES TO RETAIN THE ISLANDS RESULTS IN HOSTILITIES BETWEEN FILIPINOS AND AMERICANS

**Instruction from Washington.** In the midst of the events connected with the establishment of the Philippine Republic, came the unwelcome news that Spain had ceded the Archipelago to the United States. On the fourth of January, 1899, President McKinley instructed General Otis, who was in command of the American forces in the Islands, that the sovereignty of the United States over the Philippines must be recognized. This meant, of course, that opposition to American rule would result in war. On the twenty-first of January, President Aguinaldo proclaimed the Constitution, and immediately began preparations for war.

**The claims of the Filipinos.** The Filipinos refused to recognize the right of sovereignty of the United States over the Philippines, declaring that the Islanders had repeatedly

made known their desire to be free and independent ; that they were already starting a government of their own ; that they had sacrificed many lives on the field of battle, against Spanish dominion, until, one by one, the provinces had fallen into their own hands ; that when Manila capitulated, the Filipino forces were in control of the greater part of the Archipelago ; that Spain held nothing but Manila and a few isolated places. For these reasons the Revolutionary Government claimed that Spain had no moral right to cede the Philippines to the United States, since the Islands had virtually passed from her control.

#### THE AMERICAN TROOPS OVERCOME ORGANIZED RESISTANCE

**The battle of Manila.** The latter part of January was a period of suspense and uncertainty. The American forces in Manila gradually extended their lines in the outskirts, and the Filipino forces drew closer to the city. A conflict was expected at any moment. On the night of the fourth of February, 1899, a Filipino lieutenant attempted to cross the San Juan Bridge. The American sentry ordered him to halt, and on his refusal shot and killed him. That was the signal for the beginning of the war. The Filipinos attempted to break through the American lines and enter the city. They made several gallant charges, but the Americans were equally gallant in forcing them back. The Filipinos were obliged to retire.

**The Americans in the Visayan Islands.** Before the breaking out of hostilities at Manila an American expedition was sent south to occupy the Visayan Islands. The expedition met with resistance except on the island of Negros. The

people of Iloilo said that they could not consent to any foreign interference without express orders from the central government of Luzon. In Panay Island the Americans had several engagements with the inhabitants, but soon forced them to surrender. The city of Iloilo was occupied by the American army early in 1899. One by one the other islands were taken. The fighting in Samar lasted until 1902.



SAN JUAN BRIDGE, WHERE THE HOSTILITIES BETWEEN THE AMERICANS AND THE FILIPINOS BEGAN

**The fall of Malolos.** After the defeat of the Filipinos at Manila the American army advanced northward and occupied Caloocan. Malolos, the seat of the Filipino government, lay to the north of this town. In March the Americans advanced on Malolos. Aguinaldo defended his capital as well as he could, but was defeated, and withdrew to the north. He moved the government first to San Fernando, then to San Isidro, and finally to Tarlac.

**The battle of Zapote Bridge.** One of the most fiercely contested battles of the war was fought south of Manila, at



Zapote Bridge, early in June. The Filipinos threw up strong intrenchments on the southern bank of the river and attempted to prevent the Americans from crossing. The American forces numbered about four thousand men. Of the Filipinos there were only three thousand, but their discipline and bravery won the admiration of their opponents. The Americans conducted a brilliant offensive and defeated the Filipinos, who lost about a third of their number.

**The campaign in the north.** After the fall of Malolos the Americans advanced toward the north. In an engagement at Calumpit they defeated the Filipino forces under General Luna. This defeat opened the way to the provinces of Pampanga and Nueva Ecija.

When the rainy season was over, the Americans began a strategic campaign. General MacArthur was to advance

on Tarlac, where the Filipino army had its headquarters. General Lawton was to march through the province of Nueva Ecija, and join General MacArthur from the east. General Wheaton was to effect a landing in Pangasinan, and prevent the Filipino army from retreating northward. The Americans occupied Tarlac on the twelfth of November, but three days later Aguinaldo slipped by General Wheaton and escaped into the Ilocano regions.



GENERAL ANTONIO LUNA





AMERICAN CAMPAIGN IN LUZON

**The death of Luna.** Time and again the Americans were surprised at the splendid discipline of the Filipino army confronting them. The organizer of this army was General Antonio Luna, a brilliant Filipino soldier. General Luna was born in Manila, on the twenty-ninth of October, 1868. He studied in the Ateneo Municipal. He afterwards went to the Central University of Madrid, where he received the degree of Doctor of Pharmacy. He was active in the movement for reforms in the Philippines. In many able articles he set forth the wrongs practiced in his native land, and the need of changes that would give the people justice and greater freedom. While in Europe, he studied strategy and military tactics. His military knowledge and personal courage won for him the position of commander in chief of the Filipino forces. He was considered to be the mainstay of the Revolution. In June, 1899, he was assassinated. By his death the Filipino cause suffered an irreparable loss. The circumstances of his death have not as yet been satisfactorily explained. He was a patriot, and in his will, written while he was marching to San Fernando, he expressed the desire that in case of death his body should be wrapped in the Filipino flag and buried in the soil of his country.

**The retreat of Aguinaldo.** Aguinaldo, closely pursued by the Americans, retreated up the Ilocano coast to the town of Candon. From there he plunged into the mountain fastnesses of Lepanto and Bontoc, staying for some time at the town of Cervantes. Later he crossed the valley of the Cagayan River and passed over the Sierra Madre Mountains to the Pacific coast. He stopped at the little town of Palanan, on the eastern coast of Isabela. Here he remained until his capture, which occurred on the twenty-third of March, 1901.

**The defense of Tila Pass.** On the second of December, 1899, the Americans in pursuit of Aguinaldo reached Tila Pass, where they were checked by a small detachment of Filipino soldiers. Tila Pass is a mountain gap leading into Lepanto. The Filipinos, under the command of General Gregorio del Pilar, occupied a strong position. After a most heroic defense, in which they were killed almost to a man, they surrendered the pass. "I am surrounded by fearful odds that will overcome me and my gallant men," General del Pilar wrote in his diary, "but I am well pleased with the thought that I die fighting for my beloved country." The heroism of del Pilar won the admiration of the Americans. Lieutenant Dennis P. Quinlan ordered his remains to be buried with military honors, and marked his grave with a headstone bearing the following inscription:

|  |
|--|
| GENERAL GREGORIO DEL PILAR<br>KILLED AT THE BATTLE OF TILA PASS<br>DECEMBER 2, 1899<br>COMMANDING AGUINALDO'S REAR GUARD<br>AN OFFICER AND A GENTLEMAN |
|--|

**The guerrilla warfare.** After the capture of Tarlac and the retreat of Aguinaldo to northern Luzon, the Filipino generals decided to disband and carry on the conflict by guerrilla warfare. This meant that the Filipinos recognized the superiority of the American army, but that they were not willing, as yet, to surrender. The whole Archipelago was divided into zones, or war districts, each being placed under a commander. The commanders of the zones carried on the fighting independently of each other. They fought no pitched battles, but made numerous surprise attacks on the

Americans, who now occupied many of the provinces. The Filipino commanders resorted to ambushes and raids also. In this manner the war dragged on till finally one zone commander after another surrendered to the Americans.



GENERAL GREGORIO DEL  
PILAR, THE HERO OF TILA  
PASS

**The exile of Filipino leaders.** As a part of the vigorous war policy adopted by the Americans, some thousands of Filipino leaders were arrested and imprisoned. A few of these were deemed irreconcilables, and were exiled from the Islands. They were taken to the military prison on the little island of Guam. Among the most notable of these was Apolinario Mabini, the brains of the Revolution. He was afterwards allowed to return to Manila, where he died of cholera, in 1903.

**The capture of General Aguinaldo.** During all the changes since the early part of 1900, General Aguinaldo had been at the little town of Palanan. The Americans learned of his whereabouts through an intercepted communication from him to

one of his generals. Plans for his capture were formed immediately. General Funston and four other American officers, with a company of Macabebes, embarked on the Vicksburg, passed through the Strait of San Bernardino, and sailed up the eastern coast of Luzon. On the night of the fourteenth of March, 1901, they landed at Casiguran



Bay, about one hundred miles south of Palanan. From there they made their way by land to Aguinaldo's hiding place. On the twenty-third of March, by means of a ruse, they captured Aguinaldo, and brought him back to Manila. On the nineteenth of April, Aguinaldo took the oath of allegiance to the United States. He advised his people to follow the same course.

With the capture of Aguinaldo the war began to subside. By the end of June, 1901, Malvar and Lucban were the only generals of any strength who had not surrendered.

**Summary.** The American squadron under Commodore Dewey came to Manila to destroy the Spanish fleet, not to conquer the Philippines; and so, at first, the Filipinos welcomed the Americans as their deliverers. But in the Treaty of Paris, Spain ceded the Islands to the United States. The government of the Philippines, headed by Aguinaldo, claimed that Spain had no moral right to cede the Archipelago to the United States, since the control of the Islands had practically passed out of her hands. War arose between the Filipinos and the United States. The war lasted about three years. The resistance of the Filipinos practically collapsed with the capture of Aguinaldo. Besides Aguinaldo two other Filipino leaders rose to prominence, Apolinario Mabini and Antonio Luna.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. How were the Filipinos led to believe that the United States did not intend to retain the Philippines? Why did the Filipinos decide to resist American sovereignty?

2. Tell about the formation of the Revolutionary Government; of the Philippine Republic; of the political groups.

3. Explain the campaigns which resulted in the defeat of the Revolutionary army in Luzon.

4. What tactics were then adopted by the Filipino leaders? Why did the resistance of the Filipinos practically collapse after Aguinaldo was captured?

5. Tell about the American occupation of the Visayas.

6. Tell something about each of the following men: "the brains of the Revolution"; the leader of the American land forces; the organizer of the Philippine army; the captor of Aguinaldo.

7. Give the dates of the following events: the Treaty of Paris; the beginning of the Filipino-American War; the capture of Aguinaldo.

#### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. The constitution made at Malolos.
2. The extent of Filipino resistance against the United States.
3. The object of guerrilla warfare.

## CHAPTER XXIII

### THE ESTABLISHMENT OF AMERICAN RULE

#### THE REORGANIZATION OF THE PHILIPPINE GOVERNMENT WAS BEGUN UNDER MILITARY RULE

**The military rule.** The existence of the Philippine Republic was never recognized by any nation. During the period between the downfall of Spanish authority, in 1896, and the American military occupation, in 1899, the Filipino government controlled the Archipelago, with the exception of Mindanao and Sulu, and of Manila, Cavite, and a few other towns held by Spanish soldiers. From the point of view of nations, however, no such government existed, and American control began the day that Spanish rule ended. Hence the Philippine Islands were under the rule of the United States three years before the organization of the civil government.

The nature of the American rule for this period was military. The first military governor was General Merritt, who was appointed by the president of the United States on the twenty-sixth of August, 1898. The American military forces, therefore, started the machinery of American government at the same time that they were making good the title of the United States to the Islands by actual conquest. The military rule ended on the fourth of July, 1901, when Mr. William H. Taft was inaugurated as civil governor of the Philippines.

**The first Philippine Commission.** To bring about peace and the extension of American sovereignty over the Archipelago as quickly as possible, President McKinley appointed a Commission of five members. This Commission, which was instructed to coöperate with the naval and military authorities in the Philippines, reached Manila on the fourth of March, 1899. Its members were President Schurman, of Cornell University, Rear Admiral Dewey, Major General Elwell S. Otis, the Honorable Charles Denby, and Professor Dean C. Worcester, of the University of Michigan. The Commission made an extensive study of Philippine conditions and submitted a report to the president of the United States embodying its findings. Among the recommendations made were the following :

1. A territorial form of government with an upper house half to be elected and half to be appointed, and an elected lower house, should be established in the Philippines.

2. This form of government should be put in operation promptly in the parts of the Archipelago already pacified.

3. Public schools should be immediately established, and education should be made free to all.

4. Appointments to Philippine posts should be made on the basis of fitness and good character, and not of political considerations.

**The second Philippine Commission.** The first Philippine Commission was recalled in November, 1899. The second Commission was appointed in March, 1900. Its members were Judge William H. Taft, Professor Dean C. Worcester, the Honorable Luke E. Wright, Judge Henry C. Ide, and Professor Bernard Moses. This Commission was to coöperate with the military authorities in the Islands in preparing the



way for the establishment of civil government. It was to assume the legislative power hitherto exercised by the military governor, and frame what laws it deemed necessary for the government of the Archipelago. It was charged with the obligation of giving "protection for property and life, civil and religious freedom, and wise, firm, and unselfish guidance in the paths of peace and prosperity to all the people of the Philippine Islands." The Commission reached Manila in June, 1900, and commenced its legislative work on the first day of September. The many wise laws passed by this Commission determined the nature of the civil government that was soon established.

**The advocates of peace.** As a result of the activities of the second Commission, some of the Filipino leaders began to get a better understanding of the intentions of the United States. The people were still loyal to the Philippine Republic, and the idea of independence still predominated, but there were many who now advocated the cessation of hostilities. Some of these advocates of peace were in favor of American sovereignty, although many still hoped for the recognition of an independent Filipino government.

**The Federal party.** Some of the Filipino leaders who advocated peace formed themselves into the Federal party. The first meeting was held on the twenty-third of December, 1900. This took place in a house in Calle Villalobos, in Quiapo, under the presidency of Florentino Torres, who later became an associate justice of the Supreme Court. Among the men present at this meeting were Cayetano Arellano, Doctor T. H. Pardo de Tavera, and T. G. del Rosario. The objects of this political party were to bring about peace under the sovereignty of the United States, to work for the

establishment of a liberal and democratic government for the Philippines, and finally to prepare the way for the admission of the Archipelago as a state in the American Union.

Through the activities of this party a better understanding between Americans and Filipinos was reached. Furthermore,



A PHILIPPINE SCHOOLHOUSE, AN EDUCATIONAL AND CIVIC CENTER

In 1916 there were nearly twenty-four hundred school buildings in the Philippines, of which more than four hundred were concrete buildings of the standard plan, such as is shown here

the wise counsel of individual members of the party aided the second Philippine Commission. The machinery of the new government started in a comparatively short time. This was due, in a measure, to the assistance of these men who knew the country and the conditions.

**The establishment of the schools.** Perhaps the best indication of the good will of America toward the Filipinos was the establishment of the public schools. The first English schools were established within a month after the military occupation, under the supervision of the Reverend W. D. McKinnon, an army chaplain. Afterwards other schools were established through the efforts of George P. Anderson and Captain Albert Todd. In May, 1900, the Philippine Commission appointed a General Superintendent of Public Instruction, and in January, 1901, created the Department of Public Instruction. When the civil government was inaugurated in the following July, one of the four departments of the new government was the Department of Public Instruction.

Under this department a system of public schools was established, modeled after that of the United States. The excellent work begun by the military régime was continued. In the course of time primary, intermediate, and secondary grades were developed. As a part of the system, there were established in Manila a Normal School, a School of Arts and Trades, a School of Commerce, and a School for the Deaf and Blind. In June, 1908, a law was passed by the Philippine legislature to found the University of the Philippines. This system of public instruction has become the most famous in the Orient.

It is mainly through the public schools that education has become so widely diffused in the Philippines, reaching even the remotest barrios, where the children of the poor farmer and of the humble fisherman live. In 1915 and 1916 there were nearly six hundred and thirty-eight thousand children in the public schools. About five hundred and seventy-nine thousand of these were in the primary grades.

**The organization of the judiciary.** From the thirteenth of August, 1898, till about the middle of the following year judicial matters were referred to the military courts. But on the twenty-ninth of May, 1899, a Supreme Court was established, with nine justices, six of whom were Filipinos. The chief justice was the well-known Filipino lawyer Cayetano S. Arellano, once Secretary of Foreign Relations of the Revolutionary Government.

On the fifth day of June, 1899, there were established, in Manila, courts of first instance, and also courts of justices of the peace. Afterwards courts of first instance were established in the provinces. Side by side with these courts, however, military tribunals also existed, which had jurisdiction over "offenses prejudicial to military administration and discipline."



CAYETANO S. ARELLANO, CHIEF  
JUSTICE OF THE SUPREME COURT  
OF THE PHILIPPINES

Under the second Philippine Commission the courts were practically made over into the present judiciary system.

**The reorganization of the municipalities.** The military government may also be credited with the first step toward the reorganization of the municipalities. The town Baliuag, in Bulacan, was the first to be reorganized under American supervision. On a request from the town itself, the municipal officers were chosen by election. This was in May, 1899.



Soon four towns in Cavite followed the example of Baliuag. These were healthful signs of peace, and the military governor made haste to provide a rough plan for municipal reorganization based on Spanish decrees and customs. This temporary plan was made public in August. In March, 1900, the reorganization was embodied in a law. This law was based on the Maura Laws, and was the work of a board of five, of which Chief Justice Arellano was the chairman. Only a few municipalities, however, were organized under this statute; for in September the Philippine Commission began its legislative functions.

#### THE REORGANIZATION IS CONTINUED UNDER THE CIVIL GOVERNMENT

**The civil government.** When the Commission had worked out the plan of government, military rule gave way to civil government. On the fourth of July, 1901, William H. Taft, the president of the Commission, was inaugurated civil governor of the Philippines. On the first of September, Dean C. Worcester of the Commission was appointed Secretary of the Interior; Henry C. Ide, Secretary of Finance and Justice; Luke E. Wright, Secretary of Commerce and Police; and Bernard Moses, Secretary of Public Instruction. Three Filipinos, Doctor T. H. Pardo de Tavera, Benito Legarda, and José Luzuriaga, were appointed members of the Commission, which was thus increased to seven. On the twenty-ninth of October the Secretary of Public Instruction was appointed vice governor.

*Autonomous provincial and local government.* The local government was made autonomous; that is, the provinces and the municipalities were governed each by its own officials.

The government of a province was vested in the provincial governor and the provincial board. At first the governor was appointed by the civil governor; later he was elected by the counselors of all the towns; and finally he was elected by suffrage. The provincial board was at first composed of the governor, the provincial treasurer, and the provincial engineer. From time to time, however, changes were made in its composition. The board now consists of the governor and two elected members called vocales. The government of a municipality is vested in a president, a vice president, a secretary, a treasurer, and a council. All of these officers except the secretary and the treasurer are elected by suffrage.

**Difficulties of the new government.** The new government found its way beset with difficulties. The war was still going on. In some of the provinces numerous bands of robbers terrorized the people, and crops and work animals were not safe from devastation and pillage. These robbers generally hid in the mountains and often made raids on defenseless towns and barrios, committing outrages and barbarities on the inhabitants. So much misery was created by these brigands that the Commission found it necessary to inflict heavy punishment on the culprits, and to reconcentrate the people of the barrios of some provinces in or about towns where they could have better protection. In addition to the havoc by war and ladronism there were epidemics of cholera and smallpox. In earlier times cholera had often been epidemic. It appeared again in March, 1902, and for a period of about two years sent thousands of victims to their graves. The mortality was appalling, because of the inadequacy of medical aid and the ignorance of the people regarding sanitation.

The country suffered not only from war, robbery, and epidemic, but from famine. Carabaos and other draft animals were destroyed by the rinderpest and the surra, introduced about this time from China. As a result, there was a decrease



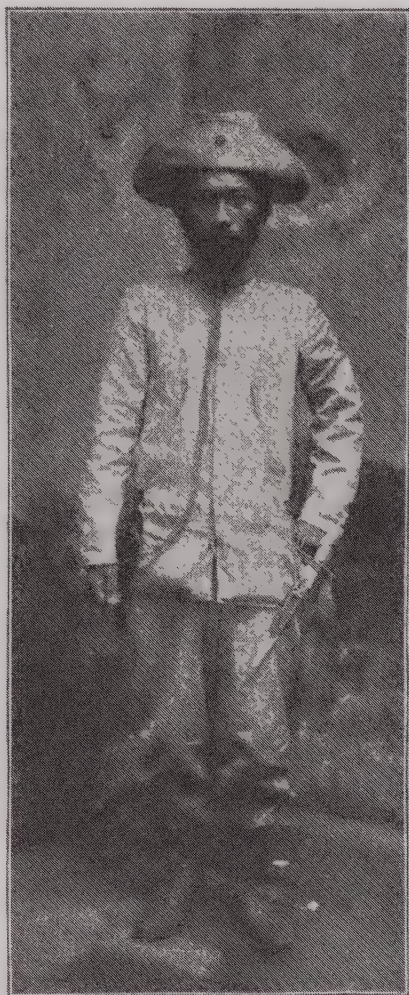
BURNING THE FARELA DISTRICT IN MANILA, DURING THE EPIDEMIC OF CHOLERA IN 1902

in the production of rice, and by the summer of 1902 famine threatened many parts of the Archipelago; the price went so high that the Commission appropriated two million pesos for the purchase of rice, and sold it to the needy at a fair rate. These unhappy conditions were aggravated, in 1903, by the locusts. The Congress of the United States voted the sum of six million pesos for the relief of the people,



The last year of the war. It may be said that the year 1902 was the last year of the war. Active fighting had ceased with the capture of Aguinaldo, in March, 1901, but guerilla warfare continued for another year. Bohol, Cebu, Samar, and Batangas had continued their resistance, which greatly hindered the progress of the new government. Finally Bohol and Cebu were pacified; and in February, 1902, came the surrender of General Lucban, in Samar, followed by the surrender of General Malvar, of Batangas, in June.

**The friar lands.** Soon after the inauguration of civil government, investigations were begun on the troublesome question of the friar lands. For many years the religious orders in the Philippines had been in possession of about one hundred and seventy-two thousand hectares of land, of which more than one hundred and eleven thousand were in the



GENERAL MIGUEL MALVAR, THE  
LAST MILITARY LEADER TO  
SURRENDER



vicinity of Manila. These friar lands had been the cause of much friction between the orders and the Filipino tenants. Some of the tenants claimed that the lands belonged to them. Moreover, they objected to the large share of the crops taken as rent by the friar administrators. From the beginning of the Revolution, in 1896, it had been found impossible to collect rentals from these tenants. To remove

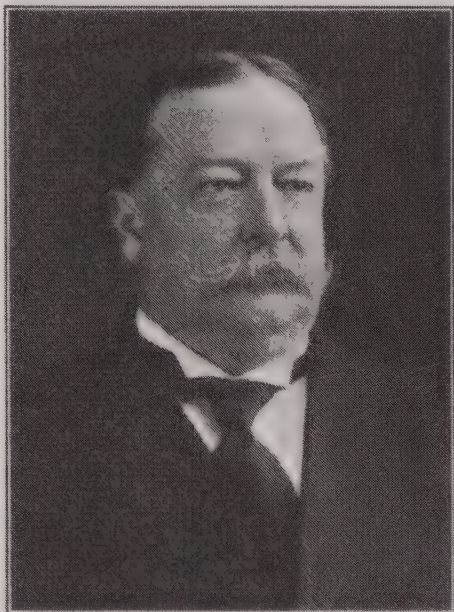


OLD SPANISH COINS

the cause of friction and settle the question justly, Governor Taft recommended that the government buy these lands and sell them in small parcels to the tenants. After negotiations which extended through a period of several months the Philippine government bought the friar lands, paying for them the sum of fourteen million four hundred and seventy-four thousand pesos. This money was raised by an issue of bonds authorized by the government of the United States.

**The Aglipay schism.** About the middle of the year 1902 there occurred in the Islands the great schism in the Roman Catholic Church. The movement to establish a separate church was led by Gregorio Aglipay, a Filipino priest, who had been prominent in the Revolution. Aglipay was born at Batac, in Ilocos Norte.

He was educated in the College of San Juan de Letran, in Manila. Later he entered the Vigan Seminary, where he studied for the priesthood. He represented his native province of Ilocos in the Revolutionary Congress that met in Malolos. Because of the continued service of the friars as parish curates, Father Aglipay, at the close of the war, planned to establish the Filipino Inde-



WILLIAM HOWARD TAFT, FIRST CIVIL GOVERNOR OF THE PHILIPPINES

pendent Church, popularly known as the Aglipay Church. The secession took place about the middle of 1902, under the patronage of Doña Saturnina de Abreu, the mother-in-law of Don Felipe Buencamino, and with the help of Don Isabelo de los Reyes, later a councilor of the city of Manila. Churches were founded in hundreds of towns. Father Aglipay was unanimously acclaimed as the Pontifex Maximus of the new church.

**The reforms in the currency.** The Mexican peso had for a long time been in circulation in the Islands. Indeed, this had been for decades the common money of the Far East. Spain had, toward the end of her rule in the Islands, established a Spanish-Filipino coinage, but nevertheless the Mexican peso remained in circulation.

In 1901 there was marked depreciation in the value of silver the world over. This naturally resulted in losses in the Philippines. Business was handicapped, since the purchasing value of the Mexican peso was greatly reduced. The coin had so depreciated that in March, 1903, a gold dollar was worth two pesos and sixty-six centavos. To stabilize the currency in the Islands, the Congress of the United States, on the recommendation of the Philippine Commission, passed an act, in May, 1902, establishing a coinage based on gold. A decimal currency was adopted, planned with the assistance of Charles A. Conant. The new coins were designed by Melecio Figueroa, a Filipino engraver, who had studied his art in Europe. Paper money also was issued, in various denominations. On the two-peso bill the picture of Rizal is a prominent part of the design.

**The retirement of Governor Taft.** After two and one half years of efficient service, Mr. Taft retired from the governorship of the Philippines to become Secretary of War of the United States. Nobody in the early days of American rule did more for the Philippines than Governor Taft. He prepared the country for civil government, which he later established. In his administration he worked hard to make that government a success and a blessing to the people. It was Mr. Taft who said that the policy of the United States toward the Islands was "The Philippines for the Filipinos."

Mr. Taft was born in Cincinnati, in Ohio. At the age of twenty-one he graduated from Yale University. In 1880 he received a degree in law at the Cincinnati Law School. He did not at once begin the practice of law, but became law reporter for the Cincinnati Times. Before his appointment as president of the second Philippine Commission, in 1900, he was judge in one of the Federal courts. After leaving the Philippines he served as Secretary of War for about four years. In 1908 he was elected president of the United States. Governor Taft was succeeded in the Islands by Luke E. Wright.

**Wright's policy.** As governor-general of the Philippines, Mr. Wright favored the development of the industries in the Islands and the extension and improvement of roads. For these reasons he encouraged the presence of foreign merchants and foreign capitalists. He declared it to be his policy to give equal opportunities to all. Many of the plans for public improvements originated during his administration.

**The construction of roads and railways.** The importance of road building was recognized at the very beginning of American rule. The first law passed by the Commission called for the appropriation of two million Mexican pesos for the construction and repair of roads and bridges. The work in road and railway construction during the administration of Governor Wright resulted in improved means of communication. In succeeding administrations this work was carried on with energy. Roads were built from Iba to Tarlac, from Pagbilao to Atinyonan, and across the island of Cebu. Railways were also constructed in Luzon, Panay, and Cebu.

The railroads in Luzon have recently been extended from Manila to the provinces of Cavite, Laguna, Batangas, and



Tayabas. These railways were built and operated by private companies. The government encouraged the extension of the roads by guaranteeing for thirty years the interest on the companies' bonds.

**The improvements of the ports.** The improvements in the city of Manila were planned to beautify and make it more healthful and convenient for commerce. These improvements cost more than eight million pesos. The waterworks were enlarged. A system of sewerage was started. The waterfront was improved. The bay was deepened; the mud taken from the bottom of the sea was used to fill up the city front along the Malecon. A breakwater was constructed to make a safe harbor, and strong concrete piers were built. The city was greatly beautified and made more healthful by the conversion of the old moats round the Walled City into sunken gardens. Some of the streets were widened and straightened. For the convenience of traffic, breaches were made in the wall that surrounded Intramuros. In 1904 the electric railway began operations. Later the ports of Cebu, Iloilo, and Zamboanga were also improved.

**The metric system.** In 1906 the Philippine government adopted the international metric system of weights and measures. The government did this to avoid further wrongs and injustices from the use of the old weights and measures, which had been greatly falsified. For the sake of keeping the old native measures kaban, ganta, and chupa, the government standardized them. The ganta, for example, was made equal to three liters.

**The postal savings banks.** About the same time that the metric system was introduced, the postal savings banks were established. They are managed as a part of the postal

system, and are conducted by the postmasters. They are intended to encourage the people, especially the children, to save money. Their establishment was a wise measure. They have become popular, not only among the poor, but among the well-to-do.

**The public health.** To prevent such epidemics as had occurred from 1902 to 1904, and many times in past centuries, the government made haste to perfect the organization of the Bureau of Health. This bureau to-day reaches the remotest municipalities. It took up its duties almost at the beginning of the American rule in the Islands. By its painstaking work it has succeeded in banishing from the Archipelago the most dangerous and contagious diseases. Vaccination has been made compulsory. People have been taught the principles of hygiene and sanitation. The result of the teaching of these subjects in the public schools is beyond calculation. Regulations have been issued with regard to communicable diseases. The result has been the almost complete disappearance of smallpox, of the bubonic plague, and of epidemics of cholera. The mortality from beriberi and tuberculosis has been greatly reduced also. The establishment of the Bureau of Health alone, to say nothing of the other bureaus which are equally efficient, would entitle the United States to high commendation.

**Summary.** The American government in the Philippines was first military and then civil. From the first the aim was to bring peace to the country, to increase its prosperity, to allow the Filipinos a greater share in the government, and to improve the educational, social, and sanitary conditions of the people. Success resulted from coöperation between the Americans and the Filipinos.

**QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW**

1. Mention the chief results accomplished by the military government, and tell about each of them.

2. What was the first Philippine Commission, and for what purpose was it appointed? What recommendations did it make to the president of the United States regarding the Islands?

3. What was the second Philippine Commission? Tell the part it played in bringing about peace.

4. Why was the Federal party organized? What were its objects? Name some of its leaders, and tell what you can about each.

5. Explain the organization of the civil government. Name some Filipinos and some Americans who composed the Philippine Commission. Tell about the difficulties that confronted the new government.

6. Explain each of the following: the provincial and municipal government; the purchase of the friar lands; the Aglipay schism; the reforms in the currency.

7. Tell about the economic policy of Governor Wright.

8. Describe the improvements made in Manila and its harbor.

9. Give the results of the introduction of the metric system, of the postal savings banks, and of the organization of the Bureau of Health.

10. Give the dates of the following events: the establishment of the first English schools; the establishment of the civil government; the last year of the war.

**TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION**

1. The difference between military government and civil government.

2. The part played by the Filipinos in the organization of the Philippine government.

3. A comparison of Anda, la Torre, and Taft.

## CHAPTER XXIV

### A NEW BEGINNING

#### THE AMERICAN CONTROL OF LEGISLATION

**A period of calm.** The period from the inauguration of the civil government up to the administration of Governor-general Ide, in 1906, was, from the political point of view, comparatively inactive. There were some cases of political agitation in favor of independence, but these were isolated. The country had not quite recovered from the years of devastation of war, and the people as a whole were glad to have time and opportunity to recuperate.

Besides, the people were afraid to agitate openly for independence, on account of the law against treason and sedition. This law stated that until the war was officially declared to be over, it would be unlawful for anybody to advocate orally or otherwise the separation of the Archipelago from the United States. On the eighth of September, 1902, the war was officially declared to be ended, but the law against treason and sedition was not repealed. The existence of such a law was perhaps necessary at that time in view of the attitude of some persons toward American sovereignty.

**The Independista parties.** Peace and prosperity led to the renewal of political activity. The people abandoned the idea of resorting to arms, largely because they were beginning to understand the benevolent intentions of America. But they did not give up the hope that the United States might yet



grant them at least an autonomous government, if not an independent national existence. Political parties were organized to secure ultimate separation. The first of these parties to come into existence was the Nacionalista party, organized by Pascual H. Poblete. The formation of the Popular Nationalist League, the Immediate-Independence party, the Union Nationalist party, and others with similar ends in view soon followed. Sergio Osmeña, Rafael Palma, Doctor Galicano Apacible, Teodoro Sandico, and other prominent Filipinos were members of these parties. In 1907 a new Nacionalista party arose out of the fusion of the Immediate-Independence party and the Union Nationalist party. This party has been for some time and still is in control of the government. Its platform calls for independence.

**The reorganization of the Federal party.** That the people were generally in favor of ultimate separation from the United States was shown by the support they gave to the above-named parties. The action of the people led the Federal party to revise its platform on the basis of ultimate independence. This took place in a general convention of the party on the twenty-first of May, 1905. On the second of January, 1907, in another convention, the party again changed its name to the National Progressive party, by which it is still known.

**The convention of provincial governors.** On the first of October, 1906, for the first time in the history of the Philippines, the provincial governors held a convention. The convention assembled in Manila. The presiding officer was Governor Osmeña, of Cebu. James F. Smith, then the governor-general of the Philippines, welcomed the convention, and submitted for its consideration a number of questions



THE FIRST PHILIPPINE ASSEMBLY

affecting the government of the provinces. After studying these questions, the convention made several recommendations to the governor-general. As a result, some changes were made in the provincial governments. The most important of these changes consisted in creating an elective third member of the provincial board, and in granting to the provincial board the power to enforce or suspend the land tax.

#### DUAL CONTROL OF LEGISLATION

**The census of 1903.** Soon after the official declaration of the end of the war, preparations were made for the taking of a census. General J. P. Sanger of the United States army was appointed director of the census. He was assisted by Henry Gannett, of the United States Geological Survey, and by Victor Olmsted, of the Bureau of Statistics. The census was taken in 1903. The report was published in 1905, in four volumes, both in English and in Spanish. According to this census the population of the Philippines was 7,635,426. A later estimate gave 9,503,271 as the population of the Archipelago in 1916.

**The Philippine Assembly.** It was the policy of the United States, from the very beginning of her rule in the Islands, to have the Filipinos share in the government. When the Supreme Court was organized under the military régime, six of the nine justices were Filipinos; when it was reorganized, three of the seven were Filipinos. The provincial governors were generally Filipinos; the local governments had from the start been controlled by Filipino officials. On the first of September, 1901, three Filipinos were appointed members of the Philippine Commission. In 1907 another law-making body, composed entirely of Filipinos, came into

existence. This body was the Philippine Assembly. With the Commission as the upper house, it constituted the legislative body of the Philippines.

The Philippine Assembly was authorized by an act passed by the Congress of the United States in 1902, empowering



SPEAKER OSMEÑA

the president to establish a popular assembly in the Philip-  
pines two years after the publication of a census. The census  
was taken in 1903, and published in 1905. On the thirtieth  
of July, 1907, the general election was held for members of  
the Assembly. The Philippines, excluding the non-Christian  
provinces, were divided into eighty districts. Each district  
elected one member. Of the eighty members elected, the



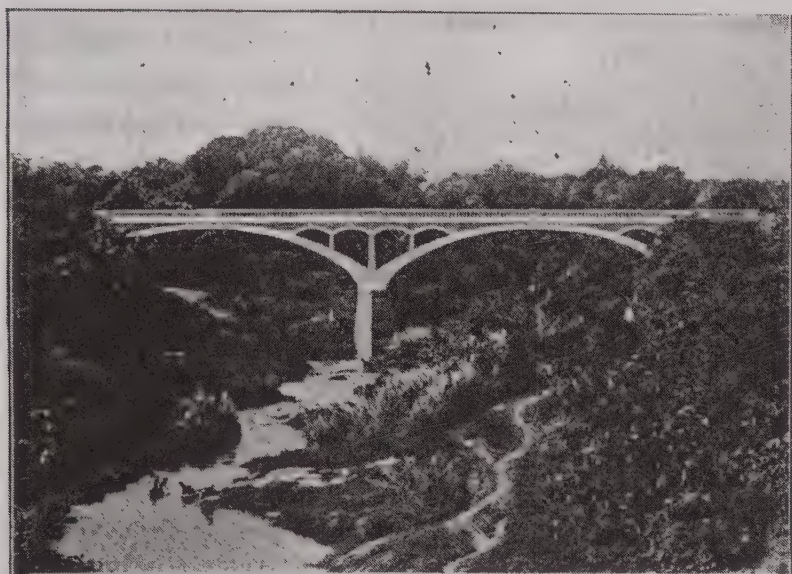
majority were in favor of ultimate independence. At first the members of the Assembly held office for two years, but their tenure of office was later extended to a period of four years.

The inauguration of the Assembly took place in the Grand Opera House, in Manila, on the sixteenth of October, 1907. Secretary Taft, Governor-general Smith, and many other prominent government officials were present. The Honorable Sergio Osmeña, of Cebu, was elected speaker. Under the leadership of this able Filipino statesman many good measures were passed, most of which were sanctioned by the Commission, and became laws of the Philippines. The first measure passed by the Assembly was an act setting aside the sum of one million pesos for the construction of barrio schools.

#### **The conflicts between the Assembly and the Commission.**

The Philippine Commission and the first Philippine Assembly worked together without much friction. This harmonious relationship, however, was not maintained with the second Assembly. A measure could originate either in the Commission or in the Assembly; but to become a law, the measure must have the consent of both houses. The second Philippine Assembly passed many measures in which the Commission refused to concur. Among these were an act abolishing the death penalty, an act extending the powers of the local governments, and an act repealing the law against treason and sedition. On the other hand, certain measures originating in the Commission failed to pass the Assembly. The two bodies did not reach an agreement with respect to the appropriation bill and the selection of Resident Commissioners to Washington.

**Improvement in the means of communication.** These conflicts between the Assembly and the Commission, however, did not hamper the program of the government with regard to public works. Especially marked was the improvement in the means of communication during the administration of W. Cameron Forbes. He is sometimes called the



BRIDGE OVER THE SAN JUAN RIVER, IN LAGUNA PROVINCE

Road-building Governor. "I liken the work of the government on irrigation and improvement of transportation," said Governor Forbes in his inaugural address, "to cutting the strings which close the mouth of a purse of gold. The gold will pour forth and yield enough for all."

During the administration of Governor Forbes many important public works were completed, and other improvements were introduced. The means of communication by water as well as by land were improved. Shipping facilities, both

foreign and interisland, were increased, and harbors were made better. The provinces were encouraged and aided in building roads, and the responsibility for the maintenance of these roads was placed in the hands of the local authorities.



© Harris & Ewing

MANUEL L. QUEZÓN, PRESIDENT OF THE  
FIRST PHILIPPINE SENATE

The railways in Luzon, Panay, and Cebu were extended also. Artesian wells were made, to furnish pure drinking water to the municipalities. Reënforced concrete began to be used in public buildings.

**The resident commissioners.** The act of Congress that provided for the establishment of the Philippine Assembly, provided for sending two Filipino delegates to the House of Representatives at Washington also. The delegates, who were

called resident commissioners, might take part in the debates, but they could not vote. They were to be elected by the Commission and the Assembly, voting separately, each body electing one delegate, such election being subject to the concurrence of the other body. The first resident commissioners were Benito Legarda and Pablo Ocampo. The later resident commissioners were Manuel L. Quezón,



Manuel Earnshaw, and the present incumbents, Jaime C. de Veyra and Teodoro Yangco. In 1911 the two legislative bodies could not agree on the election of Commissioner Legarda for a third term.

#### FILIPINO CONTROL OF LEGISLATION

**Quezón's campaign.** Manuel L. Quezón, as resident commissioner, toured the United States to interest the American people in behalf of Philippine independence. Many were the difficulties that he encountered. But he went on with his work, knowing that the American people, and not Congress, would have the final word with respect to the future of the Philippines. His campaign was to a great extent successful.

**Harrison's administration.** On the sixth of October, 1913, as a result of the election of a Democratic president in the United States in 1912, Francis Burton Harrison came to the Islands as governor-general. During his administration he effected many changes in accordance with the wishes of the Filipinos. Thus a more friendly and more harmonious relationship grew up between the two peoples. In his inaugural address, delivered on the Luneta immediately after his arrival in the Philippines, Governor Harrison said that the president of the United States charged him to deliver to the Filipino people the following message:

We regard ourselves as trustees, acting not for the advantage of the United States, but for the benefit of the people of the Philippine Islands.

Every step we take will be taken with a view to the ultimate independence of the Islands and as a preparation for that independence. And we hope to move toward that end as rapidly as the



safety and the permanent interests of the Islands will permit. After each step taken experience will guide us to the next.

The administration will take one step at once, and will give the native citizens of the Islands a majority in the appointive Commission, and thus in the upper as well as in the lower house of the legislature a majority representation will be secured to them.



GOVERNOR-GENERAL HARRISON

We do this in the confident hope and expectation that immediate proof will be given, in the action of the Commission under the new arrangement, of the political capacity of those native citizens who have already come forward to represent and to lead their people in affairs.

**Filipinos have control of the legislature.** In pursuance of the policy announced in his inaugural address, Governor

Harrison appointed as the Philippine Commission five Filipinos and four Americans, including the governor-general. This gave the Filipinos the full control of the legislature, since the Assembly was made up entirely of Filipinos, and the Commission had a Filipino majority. In this way the harmonious relationship between the two bodies was restored; and in

the period from 1913 to 1916, before the Philippine Commission was superseded by the Philippine Senate, many good laws were passed. Some of the important measures were an act creating a Board of Public Utility Commission, an act establishing the Public Welfare Board, an act creating the Coconut Products Board, and an act creating the Philippine National Bank.

**Rapid Filipinization.** The rapid Filipinization of some of the more responsible government offices also began during Governor Harrison's administration. The United States has adhered to its policy of granting to the Filipinos as large a share in the government as is consistent with efficiency. However, during the former administrations there was a feeling, shared in by most Filipinos, that conservatism prevailed, and that too few Filipinos were given positions of responsibility. Since 1913 the policy of Filipinization has been carried out more strictly. Many Filipinos have been appointed to the minor as well as to the more important government offices, including the directorships of bureaus. On the first of July, 1916, there were in the Philippine civil service fifteen hundred Americans and eight thousand two hundred Filipinos.

**The Jones bills.** The result of the efforts of Resident Commissioners Quezón and Earnshaw, in Washington, was the introduction into the House of Representatives, by Congressman Jones, of Virginia, of a bill granting Philippine independence in 1921. This measure did not get beyond the House Committee on Insular Affairs. A later bill, introduced by the same congressman, promised independence as soon as stable government could be established. This bill provided, also, for the reorganization of the legislative part of the

Philippine government. It passed both houses of Congress and was signed by President Wilson. In the Philippines there was some opposition to the bill, by the more radical element of the population of Manila, who organized themselves into a political party called the National Democratic party, or the Third party.

**America's purpose defined.** In the Jones Act, of 1916, the people of the United States declare, in unequivocal terms, that it is their intention, sometime in the future, to withdraw from the Philippines. No date for this withdrawal is set, but it is wisely provided that a stable government shall first be maintained in the Islands. The United States has once more proved herself to be magnanimous and just. Her benevolent attitude toward the Filipinos has no parallel in the history of colonization.

**Home rule.** With the passage of the Jones Act the government of the Philippines practically became autonomous. The Philippine Assembly became the House of Representatives; the Philippine Commission was abolished, and in its place was created a Senate, composed entirely of Filipinos. By this reorganization the Philippine legislature became a body representative of the Filipino people, composed of Filipinos elected by popular franchise. The legislature met for the first time on the sixteenth of October, 1916. Manuel L. Quezón was elected President of the Senate, and Sergio Osmeña Speaker of the House of Representatives.

The administrative powers are vested in the governor-general and a cabinet composed of the six secretaries of the departments. The governor-general has the power of veto on all acts passed by the legislature. The members of the cabinet, except the vice governor, are Filipinos.



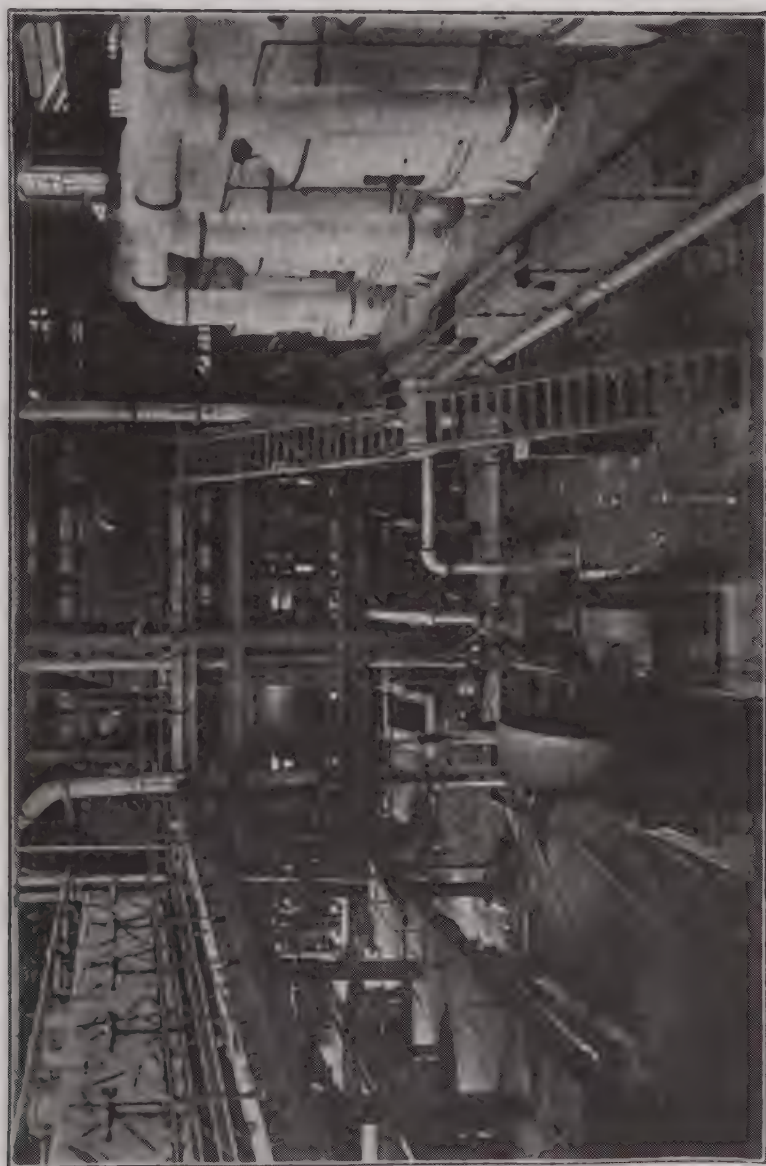


JOINT MEETING OF THE FIRST PHILIPPINE LEGISLATURE



**The policy of nationalization.** The non-Christian peoples of the Philippines are governed by special legislation ; for their customs, traditions, laws, and manner of living are somewhat different from those of the Christian Filipinos. The Moros, for example, are Mohammedans ; most of the mountain dwellers are pagans. However, the policy has been, and still is, that by gradual evolution these different groups shall be brought under the same form of civil government as the Christian Filipinos. In the reorganization of the Philippine legislature senators and representatives were appointed from the Mountain Province and from the Department of Mindanao and Sulu. Thus for the first time in the history of the Philippines all the elements that make up the population are represented in one legislative body. This is a long step toward creating a unified Filipino people, living under the same government and subject to the same laws.

**The finances of the government.** Since the establishment of American rule, the government of the Philippines has been self-supporting, and a surplus amounting to several million pesos has been accumulated in the Insular Treasury. The expenses in connection with the American army and navy in the Philippines, and part of the expenses of the Coast and Geodetic Survey, as well as the salaries of the Philippine Resident Commissioners at Washington, are borne by the government of the United States ; but these expenses really belong to the Federal government. Taxation, compared with that of other countries, is low. The main sources of the revenue are the excise taxes, the customs, the license and business tax, the tax on real estate, the cedula tax, the wharfage charges, the franchise tax, and the income tax. Incidental revenue is also raised by fines and forfeitures, by fees for the



THE INTERIOR VIEW OF A MODERN SUGAR CENTRAL IN NEGROS

registration of cattle, by sales and rentals of public domain, and by other fees and rentals. The revenue for the fiscal year of 1916 amounted to 78,166,759 pesos; the expenditures for the same year reached a total of 73,645,737 pesos.

**The increase in foreign trade and prosperity.** The opening



SENATOR HADJI BUTU, FOREMOST  
MORO STATESMAN

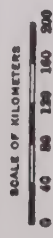
of the ports of Manila, Cebu, Iloilo, and Zamboanga, and the permitting of foreigners to engage in trade, greatly encouraged agriculture and commerce in the Philippines. There was an increase in the exportation of sugar, hemp, tobacco, and copra; rice and luxuries were imported in corresponding amounts. During the period from 1880 to 1896 a yearly average of about forty million pesos' worth of products was exported

from the Philippines. After American occupation exports increased to a value of sixty million pesos per annum. There was no further increase until the year 1909, when a special market was provided in the United States. Such countries as Java, Cuba, and Mexico were producing sugar, tobacco, rope fiber, and copra more cheaply than the Philippines. The United States was using large quantities of these materials. Therefore, in 1909, Congress included in the Payne Tariff





# PHILIPPINE ISLANDS







Act a provision for free trade between the Philippines and the United States. Thus, while imports from Cuba, Java, and other countries are taxed, those from the Philippines enter the United States free of duty. As a result, trade between the Philippines and the United States has increased by leaps and bounds. In 1916 the value of exports from the Philippines was about one hundred and forty million pesos.

**The future.** The future is full of hope. America's effort to give the Philippines her best in the way of efficient government has not been in vain. The various government bureaus are doing excellent work. Education is becoming more and more general with the great masses of the population. Public health is being improved, and many lives are saved that would otherwise be cut short. Efforts are being made to eradicate pests and animal diseases, and to increase production. A sign of the progress of agriculture, and of the increasing power and importance of the farmer, is the annual Farmers' Congress, which held its third convention in Manila in August, 1917, with delegates from the different parts of the Archipelago. Commerce and industry are being promoted and encouraged. As a result of the policy of Filipinization, the number of experienced and trained Filipino public servants is yearly increasing. In a word, the Philippines are on the threshold of a new era. They have gained many lessons from the past, and look with confidence to the future.

#### QUESTIONS FOR REVIEW

1. Tell how the Filipinos have been granted a greater and greater share in the government since American occupation.
2. Why did the Filipinos not again take up arms against the United States to gain independence?



## 308 BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

3. Name three political parties in the Philippines. Explain the formation and the platform of each.

4. Explain what is meant by the dual control of legislation. How long did this dual control last?

5. Tell about the improvements in the means of communication under Governor Forbes.

6. Name the chief provisions of the Jones Act.

7. Give a short history of the Filipinization of the Philippine legislature.

8. What is meant by the policy of nationalization? by home rule?

9. Describe the condition of the finances of the Philippine government during the last decade. Describe the increase in trade and prosperity.

10. Give the dates of the following events: the first Philippine Assembly; the appointment of a Filipino majority on the Commission; the Jones Act.

### TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION

1. Why a census was necessary before the Assembly was elected.
2. The importance of the Resident Commissioners in the United States.
3. The first act of the Philippine Assembly.
4. The present policy toward the non-Christian peoples.
5. The Philippine cabinet.

## APPENDIX

### I. LIST OF IMPORTANT DATES AND EVENTS

- 1280. Chao-Ju-Kua, a Chinese geographer, mentions the Philippines and describes some of the islands in his book entitled "Chu-fan-chih."
- 1400. Arrival of Shereef Kabungsuwan and Rajah Baginda. The first of these two men introduced Mohammedanism into Mindanao, and founded the sultanate of Magindanao; the second introduced Mohammedanism into Sulû.
- 1433. Calantiao, third chief of Panay, writes a penal code. With the exception of the Moro codes of law, this is the only Filipino legal code that has been preserved.
- 1493. The first Line of Demarcation. Pope Alexander VI divided the world between Spain and Portugal by a line drawn one hundred leagues west of the Azores. All unoccupied lands west of the line were assigned to Spain; all those east, to Portugal.
- 1494. Treaty of Tordesillas, which fixed the Line of Demarcation at three hundred and seventy leagues west of the Cape Verde Islands.
- 1498. Vasco da Gama sails round the Cape of Good Hope to India.
- 1511. Albuquerque conquers Malakka.
- 1519. August 10. Magellan's fleet sets sail from Spain.
- 1521. March 16. Discovery of the Philippines by Magellan.
- 1521. November 8. The survivors of Magellan's expedition reach the Molukkas.
- 1529. April 22. Treaty of Saragossa, which fixed the Line of Demarcation at two hundred and ninety-seven and one half leagues east of the Molukkas. By virtue of this treaty Spain ceded to Portugal her claim to the

Molukkas for three hundred and fifty thousand gold ducats.

1538. The Portuguese in the Molukkas send a missionary to Mindanao, who succeeds in converting some of the Magindanao chieftains.
1543. Villalobos gives the name of Felipina to the island of Samar; later the whole Archipelago was spoken of as Las Felipinas, or Las Filipinas.
1564. November 21. Legaspi's expedition starts from Navidad, Mexico.
1565. Founding of the first Spanish settlement in Cebu.
1570. Legaspi grants the first encomiendas on the occasion of the foundation of the Spanish city of Cebu.
1571. June 3. Founding of the Spanish city of Manila by Legaspi; June 24, the city council was organized.
- 1572-1573. Conquest of northern and southern Luzon by Salcedo.
1574. November 29. Limahong attacks Manila. On failing to capture the city, he sailed to Pangasinan, where he tried to establish himself.
1576. February. A Chinese embassy reaches Manila with a message from the emperor, granting an open port in China, with which Spaniards could trade.
1584. Establishment of the Royal Audiencia.
1588. Early attempt to overthrow Spanish authority, planned by the chiefs of Manila and the neighboring provinces under the leadership of Agustín de Legaspi, a Filipino chief of Tondo.
1589. King Philip issues a royal decree ordering, among other things, that no new slaves shall be made, and that those born slaves shall be freed. In 1591 the Pope also issued an order prohibiting slavery.
1590. Establishment of the first Spanish schools in Laguna by Father Plasencia.
1595. Cornelius Houtman leads an expedition to Java, where an alliance with the native rulers was finally made, thus laying the foundations of Dutch power in the East.

- 1635. Founding of the presidio of Zamboanga.
- 1645. Pampangan revolt of 1645.
- 1649. June 1. Outbreak of the Sumoroy rebellion. This rebellion was the signal for a general uprising in the Visayas.
- 1660. Pampangan revolt of 1660.
- 1660-1661. Malong's rebellion in Pangasinan. This was one of the most extensive and successful of the Philippine rebellions.
- 1697. Beginning of the Camacho controversy.
- 1744. Beginning of the Dagohoy rebellion in Bohol. This rebellion was not suppressed till 1828.
- 1754. Worst year of Moro piracy.
- 1762-1764. Occupation of Manila by the British.
- 1763. Rebellion of Diego Silan.
- 1767. Expulsion of the Jesuits.
- 1781. Establishment of the Economic Society of Friends of the Country by Basco.
- 1782. Beginning of tobacco monopoly.
- 1785. Establishment of the Royal Company of the Philippines.
- 1789-1790. First scientific survey of the Philippines.
- 1797. Beginning of permanent Spanish navy in the Philippines.
- 1810. Beginning of Filipino representation in the Spanish Cortes.
- 1811. Publication of the first newspaper in Manila.
- 1813. Proclamation in Manila of the Constitution of 1812.
- 1815. Suppression of the galleon trade.
- 1821. Separation of the Philippines from Mexico as a result of Mexico's declaration of independence from Spain.
- 1823. June. Mutiny of Novales.
- 1830. Opening of the port of Manila to foreign trade.
- 1830-1835. Governor Pascual Enrile orders new maps and charts of the Philippines made and builds the great highways of northern and southern Luzon.
- 1837. End of the Philippine representation in the Cortes.
- 1841. Rebellion of the Cofradía in Tayabas under the leadership of Apolinario de la Cruz.
- 1848. Arrival of the steamships Magallanes, Elcano, and Reina de Castilla. These were the first steamships in Manila.



## 312 BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

- 1851. August 1. Establishment of the Banco Español-Filipino.
- 1863. Introduction of educational reforms which established a system of public primary education in the Archipelago.
- 1869. Opening of the Suez Canal.
- 1869. Liberal manifestation in Manila led by Doctor José Burgos, Máximo Paterno, and Joaquín Pardo de Tavera.
- 1872. Cavite Revolt of 1872, which resulted in the execution of Burgos, Gómez, and Zamora.
- 1873. Building of the first telegraph lines in the Philippines.
- 1884. System of taxation is reformed, resulting in the introduction of the cédulas personales in place of tributes, and in the reduction of the forty days' compulsory labor to fifteen.
- 1887-1888. Introduction into the Philippines of the Spanish Penal Code, Code of Commerce, and Civil Code, in revised forms.
- 1887-1888. Beginning of the Calamba land troubles.
- 1888. Great popular manifestation in Manila asking for the expulsion of the friars.
- 1888. Founding of the Spanish-Filipino Association and La Solidaridad in Spain.
- 1891. Opening of the railroad line from Manila to Dagupan.
- 1892. Rizal founds the Liga Filipina in Manila.
- 1892. July. Founding of the Katipunan.
- 1896. August 20. Cry of Balintauac.
- 1896. August 26. Beginning of the Revolution.
- 1896. December 30. Execution of Rizal.
- 1897. July. Aguinaldo's proclamation of independence.
- 1897. December 14. Pact of Biacnabato.
- 1898. March. Renewal of war against Spain.
- 1898. May 1. American squadron sinks the Spanish squadron in Manila Bay.
- 1898. May 24. The dictatorship.
- 1898. June 23. The dictatorship gives way to the Revolutionary Government.
- 1898. August 13. Fall of Manila.
- 1898. August 26. First American military governor is appointed.

- 1898. December 10. Peace of Paris, closing the Spanish-American War.
- 1899. January 21. Establishment of the Philippine Republic.
- 1899. February 4. Battle of Manila, beginning the Filipino-American War.
- 1899. June. Battle of Zapote Bridge.
- 1899. December. Battle of Tila Pass.
- 1900. December 23. Founding of the Partido Federal.
- 1901. July 4. Inauguration of the civil government with William H. Taft as civil governor.
- 1902. September. War is officially declared at an end.
- 1906. Introduction of the metric system and the postal savings bank.
- 1907. March. Establishment of the Partido Nacionalista.
- 1907. October 16. Inauguration of the first Philippine Assembly.
- 1913. Appointment of Filipino majority in the Commission.
- 1916. August 29. Passage of the Jones Act.
- 1916. October 16. Inauguration of the first Filipino legislature, composed of a Senate and a House of Representatives.

## II. THE PHILIPPINE AUTONOMY ACT

*Jones Bill*

[An Act To declare the purpose of the people of the United States as to the future political status of the people of the Philippine Islands, and to provide a more autonomous government for those islands.]

Whereas it was never the intention of the people of the United States in the incipency of the War with Spain to make it a war of conquest or for territorial aggrandizement; and

Whereas it is, as it has always been, the purpose of the people of the United States to withdraw their sovereignty over the Philippine Islands and to recognize their independence as soon as a stable government can be established therein; and

Whereas for the speedy accomplishment of such purpose it is desirable to place in the hands of the people of the Philippines as large a control of their domestic affairs as can be given them without, in the meantime, impairing the exercise of the rights of sovereignty by the people of the United States, in order that,

by the use and exercise of popular franchise and governmental powers, they may be the better prepared to fully assume the responsibilities and enjoy all the privileges of complete independence : Therefore

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled,* That the provisions of this Act and the name "The Philippines" as used in this Act shall apply to and include the Philippine Islands ceded to the United States Government by the treaty of peace concluded between the United States and Spain on the eleventh day of April, eighteen hundred and ninety-nine, the boundaries of which are set forth in Article III of said treaty, together with those islands embraced in the treaty between Spain and the United States concluded at Washington on the seventh day of November, nineteen hundred.

SECT. 2. That all inhabitants of the Philippine Islands who were Spanish subjects on the eleventh day of April, eighteen hundred and ninety-nine, and then resided in said islands, and their children born subsequent thereto, shall be deemed and held to be citizens of the Philippine Islands, except such as shall have elected to preserve their allegiance to the Crown of Spain in accordance with the provisions of the treaty of peace between the United States and Spain, signed at Paris December tenth, eighteen hundred and ninety-eight, and except such others as have since become citizens of some other country : *Provided*, That the Philippine Legislature, herein provided for, is hereby authorized to provide by law for the acquisition of Philippine citizenship by those natives of the Philippine Islands who do not come within the foregoing provisions, the natives of the insular possessions of the United States, and such other persons residing in the Philippine Islands who are citizens of the United States, or who could become citizens of the United States under the laws of the United States if residing therein.

SECT. 3. That no law shall be enacted in said islands which shall deprive any person of life, liberty, or property without due process of law, or deny to any person therein the equal protection of the laws. Private property shall not be taken for public use without just compensation.

That in all criminal prosecutions the accused shall enjoy the right to be heard by himself and counsel, to demand the nature and cause of the accusation against him, to have a speedy and public trial, to meet the witnesses face to face, and to have compulsory process to compel the attendance of witnesses in his behalf.

That no person shall be held to answer for a criminal offense without due process of law; and no person for the same offense shall be twice put in jeopardy of punishment, nor shall be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself.

That all persons shall before conviction be bailable by sufficient sureties, except for capital offenses.

That no law impairing the obligation of contracts shall be enacted.

That no person shall be imprisoned for debt.

That the privilege of the writ of habeas corpus shall not be suspended, unless when in cases of rebellion, insurrection, or invasion the public safety may require it, in either of which events the same may be suspended by the President, or by the Governor General, wherever during such period the necessity for such suspension shall exist.

That no ex post facto law or bill of attainder shall be enacted nor shall the law of primogeniture ever be in force in the Philippines.

That no law granting a title of nobility shall be enacted, and no person holding any office of profit or trust in said islands shall, without the consent of the Congress of the United States, accept any present, emolument, office, or title of any kind whatever from any king, queen, prince, or foreign State.

That excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishment inflicted.

That the right to be secure against unreasonable searches and seizures shall not be violated.

That slavery shall not exist in said islands; nor shall involuntary servitude exist therein except as a punishment for crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted.

That no law shall be passed abridging the freedom of speech or of the press, or the right of the people peaceably to assemble and petition the Government for redress of grievances.

That no law shall be made respecting an establishment of religion



or prohibiting the free exercise thereof, and that the free exercise and enjoyment of religious profession and worship, without discrimination or preference, shall forever be allowed ; and no religious test shall be required for the exercise of civil or political rights. No public money or property shall ever be appropriated, applied, donated, or used, directly or indirectly, for the use, benefit, or support of any sect, church, denomination, sectarian institution, or system of religion, or for the use, benefit, or support of any priest, preacher, minister, or other religious teacher or dignitary as such. Contracting of polygamous or plural marriages hereafter is prohibited. That no law shall be construed to permit polygamous or plural marriages.

That no money shall be paid out of the treasury except in pursuance of an appropriation by law.

That the rule of taxation in said islands shall be uniform.

That no bill which may be enacted into law shall embrace more than one subject, and that subject shall be expressed in the title of the bill.

That no warrant shall issue but upon probable cause, supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched and the person or things to be seized.

That all money collected on any tax levied or assessed for a special purpose shall be treated as a special fund in the treasury and paid out for such purpose only.

SECT. 4. That all expenses that may be incurred on account of the Government of the Philippines for salaries of officials and the conduct of their offices and departments, and all expenses and obligations contracted for the internal improvement or development of the islands, not, however, including defenses, barracks, and other works undertaken by the United States, shall, except as otherwise specifically provided by the Congress, be paid by the Government of the Philippines.

SECT. 5. That the statutory laws of the United States hereafter enacted shall not apply to the Philippine Islands, except when they specifically so provide, or it is so provided in this Act.

SECT. 6. That the laws now in force in the Philippines shall continue in force and effect, except as altered, amended, or modified

herein, until altered, amended, or repealed by the legislative authority herein provided or by Act of Congress of the United States.

SECT. 7. That the legislative authority herein provided shall have power, when not inconsistent with this Act, by due enactment to amend, alter, modify, or repeal any law, civil or criminal, continued in force by this Act as it may from time to time see fit.

This power shall specifically extend with the limitation herein provided as to the tariff to all laws relating to revenue and taxation in effect in the Philippines.

SECT. 8. That general legislative power, except as otherwise herein provided, is hereby granted to the Philippine Legislature, authorized by this Act.

SECT. 9. That all the property and rights which may have been acquired in the Philippine Islands by the United States under the treaty of peace with Spain, signed December tenth, eighteen hundred and ninety-eight, except such land or other property as has been or shall be designated by the President of the United States for military and other reservations of the Government of the United States, and all lands which may have been subsequently acquired by the government of the Philippine Islands by purchase under the provisions of sections sixty-three and sixty-four of the Act of Congress approved July first, nineteen hundred and two, except such as may have heretofore been sold and disposed of in accordance with the provisions of said Act of Congress, are hereby placed under the control of the government of said islands to be administered or disposed of for the benefit of the inhabitants thereof, and the Philippine Legislature shall have power to legislate with respect to all such matters as it may deem advisable; but acts of the Philippine Legislature with reference to land of the public domain, timber, and mining, hereafter enacted, shall not have the force of law until approved by the President of the United States: *Provided*, That upon the approval of such an act by the Governor General, it shall be by him forthwith transmitted to the President of the United States, and he shall approve or disapprove the same within six months from and after its enactment and submission for his approval, and if not disapproved within such time it shall become a law the same as if it had been specifically

approved: *Provided further*, That where lands in the Philippine Islands have been or may be reserved for any public purpose of the United States, and, being no longer required for the purpose for which reserved, have been or may be, by order of the President, placed under the control of the government of said islands to be administered for the benefit of the inhabitants thereof, the order of the President shall be regarded as effectual to give the government of said islands full control and power to administer and dispose of such lands for the benefit of the inhabitants of said islands.

SECT. 10. That while this Act provides that the Philippine government shall have the authority to enact a tariff law the trade relations between the islands and the United States shall continue to be governed exclusively by laws of the Congress of the United States: *Provided*, That tariff acts or acts amendatory to the tariff of the Philippine Islands shall not become law until they shall receive the approval of the President of the United States, nor shall any act of the Philippine Legislature affecting immigration or the currency or coinage laws of the Philippines become a law until it has been approved by the President of the United States: *Provided further*, That the President shall approve or disapprove any act mentioned in the foregoing proviso within six months from and after its enactment and submission for his approval, and if not disapproved within such time it shall become a law the same as if it had been specifically approved.

SECT. 11. That no export duties shall be levied or collected on exports from the Philippine Islands, but taxes and assessments on property and license fees for franchises, and privileges, and internal taxes, direct or indirect, may be imposed for the purposes of the Philippine government and the provincial and municipal governments thereof, respectively, as may be provided and defined by acts of the Philippine Legislature, and, where necessary to anticipate taxes and revenues, bonds and other obligations may be issued by the Philippine government or any provincial or municipal government therein, as may be provided by law and to protect the public credit: *Provided, however*, That the entire indebtedness of the Philippine government created by the authority conferred herein shall not exceed at any one time the sum of \$15,000,000,



exclusive of those obligations known as friar land bonds, nor that of any Province or municipality a sum in excess of seven per centum of the aggregate tax valuation of its property at any one time.

SECT. 12. That general legislative powers in the Philippines, except as herein otherwise provided, shall be vested in a legislature which shall consist of two houses, one the senate and the other the house of representatives, and the two houses shall be designated "The Philippine Legislature": *Provided*, That until the Philippine Legislature as herein provided shall have been organized the existing Philippine Legislature shall have all legislative authority herein granted to the government of the Philippine Islands, except such as may now be within the exclusive jurisdiction of the Philippine Commission, which is so continued until the organization of the legislature herein provided for the Philippines. When the Philippine Legislature shall have been organized, the exclusive legislative jurisdiction and authority exercised by the Philippine Commission shall thereafter be exercised by the Philippine Legislature.

SECT. 13. That the members of the senate of the Philippines, except as herein provided, shall be elected for terms of six and three years, as hereinafter provided, by the qualified electors of the Philippines. Each of the senatorial districts defined as hereinafter provided shall have the right to elect two senators. No person shall be an elective member of the senate of the Philippines who is not a qualified elector and over thirty years of age, and who is not able to read and write either the Spanish or English language, and who has not been a resident of the Philippines for at least two consecutive years and an actual resident of the senatorial district from which chosen for a period of at least one year immediately prior to his election.

SECT. 14. That the members of the house of representatives shall, except as herein provided, be elected triennially by the qualified electors of the Philippines. Each of the representative districts hereinafter provided for shall have the right to elect one representative. No person shall be an elective member of the house of representatives who is not a qualified elector and over twenty-five years of age, and who is not able to read and write either the Spanish or English language, and who has not been an actual resident



of the district from which elected for at least one year immediately prior to his election: *Provided*, That the members of the present assembly elected on the first Tuesday in June, nineteen hundred and sixteen, shall be the members of the house of representatives from their respective districts for the term expiring in nineteen hundred and nineteen.

SECT. 15. That at the first election held pursuant to this Act, the qualified electors shall be those having the qualifications of voters under the present law; thereafter and until otherwise provided by the Philippine Legislature herein provided for the qualifications of voters for senators and representatives in the Philippines and all officers elected by the people shall be as follows:

Every male person who is not a citizen or subject of a foreign power twenty-one years of age or over (except insane and feeble-minded persons and those convicted in a court of competent jurisdiction of an infamous offense since the thirteenth day of August, eighteen hundred and ninety-eight), who shall have been a resident of the Philippines for one year and of the municipality in which he shall offer to vote for six months next preceding the day of voting, and who is comprised within one of the following classes:

(a) Those who under existing law are legal voters and have exercised the right of suffrage.

(b) Those who own real property to the value of 500 pesos, or who annually pay 30 pesos or more of the established taxes.

(c) Those who are able to read and write either Spanish, English, or a native language.

SECT. 16. That the Philippine Islands shall be divided into twelve senate districts, as follows:

First district: Batanes, Cagayan, Isabela, Ilocos Norte, and Ilocos Sur.

Second district: La Union, Pangasinan, and Zambales.

Third district: Tarlac, Nueva Ecija, Pampanga, and Bulacan.

Fourth district: Bataan, Rizal, Manila, and Laguna.

Fifth district: Batangas, Mindoro, Tayabas, and Cavite.

Sixth district: Sorsogon, Albay, and Ambos Camarines.

Seventh district: Iloilo and Capiz.

Eighth district: Negros Occidental, Negros Oriental, Antique, and Palawan.

Ninth district: Leyte and Samar.

Tenth district: Cebu.

Eleventh district: Surigao, Misamis, and Bohol.

Twelfth district: The Mountain Province, Baguio, Nueva Vizcaya, and the Department of Mindanao and Sulu.

The representative districts shall be the eighty-one now provided by law, and three in the Mountain Province, one in Nueva Vizcaya, and five in the Department of Mindanao and Sulu.

The first election under the provisions of this Act shall be held on the first Tuesday of October, nineteen hundred and sixteen, unless the Governor General in his discretion shall fix another date not earlier than thirty nor later than sixty days after the passage of this Act: *Provided*, That the Governor General's proclamation shall be published at least thirty days prior to the date fixed for the election, and there shall be chosen at such election one senator from each senate district for a term of three years and one for six years. Thereafter one senator from each district shall be elected from each senate district for a term of six years: *Provided*, That the Governor General of the Philippine Islands shall appoint, without the consent of the senate and without restriction as to residence, senators and representatives who will, in his opinion, best represent the senate district and those representative districts which may be included in the territory not now represented in the Philippine Assembly: *Provided further*, That thereafter elections shall be held only on such days and under such regulations as to ballots, voting, and qualifications of electors as may be prescribed by the Philippine Legislature, to which is hereby given authority to redistrict the Philippine Islands and modify, amend, or repeal any provision of this section, except such as refer to appointive senators and representatives.

SECT. 17. That the terms of office of elective senators and representatives shall be six and three years, respectively, and shall begin on the date of their election. In case of vacancy among the elective members of the senate or in the house of representatives, special elections may be held in the districts wherein such vacancy occurred under such regulations as may be prescribed by law, but senators or representatives elected in such cases shall hold office only for the unexpired portion of the term wherein the vacancy

occurred. Senators and representatives appointed by the Governor General shall hold office until removed by the Governor General.

SECT. 18. That the senate and house of representatives, respectively, shall be the sole judges of the elections, returns, and qualifications of their elective members, and each house may determine the rules of its proceedings, punish its members for disorderly behavior, and, with the concurrence of two thirds, expel an elective member. Both houses shall convene at the capital on the sixteenth day of October next following the election and organize by the election of a speaker or a presiding officer, a clerk, and a sergeant at arms for each house, and such other officers and assistants as may be required. A majority of each house shall constitute a quorum to do business, but a smaller number may meet, adjourn from day to day, and compel the attendance of absent members. The legislature shall hold annual sessions, commencing on the sixteenth day of October, or, if the sixteenth day of October be a legal holiday, then on the first day following which is not a legal holiday, in each year. The legislature may be called in special session at any time by the Governor General for general legislation, or for action on such specific subjects as he may designate. No special session shall continue longer than thirty days, and no regular session shall continue longer than one hundred days, exclusive of Sundays. The legislature is hereby given the power and authority to change the date of the commencement of its annual sessions.

The senators and representatives shall receive an annual compensation for their services, to be ascertained by law, and paid out of the treasury of the Philippine Islands. The senators and representatives shall, in all cases except treason, felony, and breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during their attendance at the session of their respective houses and in going to and returning from the same; and for any speech or debate in either house they shall not be questioned in any other place.

No senator or representative shall, during the time for which he may have been elected, be eligible to any office the election to which is vested in the legislature, nor shall be appointed to any office of trust or profit which shall have been created or the emoluments of which shall have been increased during such term.



SECT. 19. That each house of the legislature shall keep a journal of its proceedings and, from time to time, publish the same; and the yeas and nays of the members of either house, on any question, shall, upon demand of one fifth of those present, be entered on the journal, and every bill and joint resolution which shall have passed both houses shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the Governor General. If he approve the same, he shall sign it; but if not, he shall return it with his objections to that house in which it shall have originated, which shall enter the objections at large on its journal and proceed to reconsider it. If, after such reconsideration, two thirds of the members elected to that house shall agree to pass the same, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other house, by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and if approved by two thirds of all the members elected to that house it shall be sent to the Governor General, who, in case he shall then not approve, shall transmit the same to the President of the United States. The vote of each house shall be by the yeas and nays, and the names of the members voting for and against shall be entered on the journal. If the President of the United States approve the same, he shall sign it and it shall become a law. If he shall not approve the same, he shall return it to the Governor General, so stating, and it shall not become a law: *Provided*, That if any bill or joint resolution shall not be returned by the Governor General as herein provided within twenty days (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him the same shall become a law in like manner as if he had signed it, unless the legislature by adjournment prevent its return, in which case it shall become a law unless vetoed by the Governor General within thirty days after adjournment: *Provided further*, That the President of the United States shall approve or disapprove an act submitted to him under the provisions of this section within six months from and after its enactment and submission for his approval; and if not approved within such time, it shall become a law the same as if it had been specifically approved. The Governor General shall have the power to veto any particular item or items of an appropriation bill, but the veto shall not affect the item or items to which he does not object. The item or items objected to



shall not take effect except in the manner heretofore provided in this section as to bills and joint resolutions returned to the legislature without his approval.

All laws enacted by the Philippine Legislature shall be reported to the Congress of the United States, which hereby reserves the power and authority to annul the same. If at the termination of any fiscal year the appropriations necessary for the support of government for the ensuing fiscal year shall not have been made, the several sums appropriated in the last appropriation bills for the objects and purposes therein specified, so far as the same may be done, shall be deemed to be reappropriated for the several objects and purposes specified in said last appropriation bill; and until the legislature shall act in such behalf the treasurer shall, when so directed by the Governor General, make the payments necessary for the purposes aforesaid.

SECT. 20. That at the first meeting of the Philippine Legislature created by this Act and triennially thereafter there shall be chosen by the legislature two Resident Commissioners to the United States, who shall hold their office for a term of three years beginning with the fourth day of March following their election, and who shall be entitled to an official recognition as such by all departments upon presentation to the President of a certificate of election by the Governor General of said islands. Each of said Resident Commissioners shall, in addition to the salary and the sum in lieu of mileage now allowed by law, be allowed the same sum for stationery and for the pay of necessary clerk hire as is now allowed to the Members of the House of Representatives of the United States, to be paid out of the Treasury of the United States, and the franking privilege allowed by law to Members of Congress. No person shall be eligible to election as Resident Commissioner who is not a bona fide elector of said islands and who does not owe allegiance to the United States and who is not more than thirty years of age and who does not read and write the English language. The present two Resident Commissioners shall hold office until the fourth of March, nineteen hundred and seventeen. In case of vacancy in the position of Resident Commissioner caused by resignation or otherwise, the Governor General may make

temporary appointments until the next meeting of the Philippine Legislature, which shall then fill such vacancy ; but the Resident Commissioner thus elected shall hold office only for the unexpired portion of the term wherein the vacancy occurred.

SECT. 21. That the supreme executive power shall be vested in an executive officer, whose official title shall be "The Governor General of the Philippine Islands." He shall be appointed by the President, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate of the United States, and hold his office at the pleasure of the President and until his successor is chosen and qualified. The Governor General shall reside in the Philippine Islands during his official incumbency, and maintain his office at the seat of government. He shall, unless otherwise herein provided, appoint, by and with the consent of the Philippine Senate, such officers as may now be appointed by the Governor General, or such as he is authorized by this Act to appoint, or whom he may hereafter be authorized by law to appoint ; but appointments made while the senate is not in session shall be effective either until disapproval or until the next adjournment of the senate. He shall have general supervision and control of all the departments and bureaus of the government in the Philippine Islands as far as is not inconsistent with the provisions of this Act, and shall be commander in chief of all locally created armed forces and militia. He is hereby vested with the exclusive power to grant pardons and reprieves and remit fines and forfeitures, and may veto any legislation enacted as herein provided. He shall submit within ten days of the opening of each regular session of the Philippine Legislature a budget of receipts and expenditures, which shall be the basis of the annual appropriation bill. He shall commission all officers that he may be authorized to appoint. He shall be responsible for the faithful execution of the laws of the Philippine Islands and of the United States operative within the Philippine Islands, and whenever it becomes necessary he may call upon the commanders of the military and naval forces of the United States in the islands, or summon the posse comitatus, or call out the militia or other locally created armed forces, to prevent or suppress lawless violence, invasion, insurrection, or rebellion ; and he may, in case of rebellion or invasion, or

imminent danger thereof, when the public safety requires it, suspend the privileges of the writ of habeas corpus, or place the islands, or any part thereof, under martial law: *Provided*, That whenever the Governor General shall exercise this authority, he shall at once notify the President of the United States thereof, together with the attending facts and circumstances, and the President shall have power to modify or vacate the action of the Governor General. He shall annually and at such other times as he may be required make such official report of the transactions of the government of the Philippine Islands to an executive department of the United States to be designated by the President, and his said annual report shall be transmitted to the Congress of the United States; and he shall perform such additional duties and functions as may in pursuance of law be delegated or assigned to him by the President.

SECT. 22. That, except as provided otherwise in this Act, the executive departments of the Philippine government shall continue as now authorized by law until otherwise provided by the Philippine Legislature. When the Philippine Legislature herein provided shall convene and organize, the Philippine Commission, as such, shall cease and determine, and the members thereof shall vacate their offices as members of said commission: *Provided*, That the heads of executive departments shall continue to exercise their executive functions until the heads of departments provided by the Philippine Legislature pursuant to the provisions of this Act are appointed and qualified. The Philippine Legislature may thereafter by appropriate legislation increase the number or abolish any of the executive departments, or make such changes in the names and duties thereof as it may see fit, and shall provide for the appointment and removal of the heads of the executive departments by the Governor General: *Provided*, That all executive functions of the government must be directly under the Governor General or within one of the executive departments under the supervision and control of the Governor General. There is hereby established a bureau, to be known as the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, which said bureau shall be embraced in one of the executive departments to be designated by the Governor General, and shall have



general supervision over the public affairs of the inhabitants of the territory represented in the legislature by appointive senators and representatives.

SECT. 23. That there shall be appointed by the President, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate of the United States, a vice governor of the Philippine Islands, who shall have all of the powers of the Governor General in the case of a vacancy or temporary removal, resignation, or disability of the Governor General, or in case of his temporary absence; and the said vice governor shall be the head of the executive department, known as the department of public instruction, which shall include the bureau of education and the bureau of health, and he may be assigned such other executive duties as the Governor General may designate.

Other bureaus now included in the department of public instruction shall, until otherwise provided by the Philippine Legislature, be included in the department of the interior.

The President may designate the head of an executive department of the Philippine government to act as Governor General in the case of a vacancy, the temporary removal, resignation, or disability of the Governor General and the vice governor, or their temporary absence, and the head of the department thus designated shall exercise all the powers and perform all the duties of the Governor General during such vacancy, disability, or absence.

SECT. 24. That there shall be appointed by the President an auditor, who shall examine, audit, and settle all accounts pertaining to the revenues and receipts from whatever source of the Philippine government and of the provincial and municipal governments of the Philippines, including trust funds and funds derived from bond issues; and audit, in accordance with law and administrative regulations, all expenditures of funds or property pertaining to or held in trust by the government or the Provinces or municipalities thereof. He shall perform a like duty with respect to all government branches.

He shall keep the general accounts of the government and preserve the vouchers pertaining thereto.

It shall be the duty of the auditor to bring to the attention of the proper administrative officer expenditures of funds or



property which, in his opinion, are irregular, unnecessary, excessive, or extravagant.

There shall be a deputy auditor appointed in the same manner as the auditor. The deputy auditor shall sign such official papers as the auditor may designate and perform such other duties as the auditor may prescribe, and in case of the death, resignation, sickness, or other absence of the auditor from his office, from any cause, the deputy auditor shall have charge of such office. In case of the absence from duty, from any cause, of both the auditor and the deputy auditor, the Governor General may designate an assistant, who shall have charge of the office.

The administrative jurisdiction of the auditor over accounts, whether of funds or property, and all vouchers and records pertaining thereto, shall be exclusive. With the approval of the Governor General he shall from time to time make and promulgate general or special rules and regulations not inconsistent with law covering the method of accounting for public funds and property, and funds and property held in trust by the government or any of its branches: *Provided*, That any officer accountable for public funds or property may require such additional reports or returns from his subordinates or others as he may deem necessary for his own information and protection.

The decisions of the auditor shall be final and conclusive upon the executive branches of the government, except that appeal therefrom may be taken by the party aggrieved or the head of the department concerned within one year, in the manner hereinafter prescribed. The auditor shall, except as hereinafter provided, have like authority as that conferred by law upon the several auditors of the United States and the Comptroller of the United States Treasury and is authorized to communicate directly with any person having claims before him for settlement, or with any department, officer, or person having official relations with his office.

As soon after the close of each fiscal year as the accounts of said year may be examined and adjusted the auditor shall submit to the Governor General and the Secretary of War an annual report of the fiscal concerns of the government, showing the receipts and disbursements of the various departments and bureaus of the

government and of the various Provinces and municipalities, and make such other reports as may be required of him by the Governor General or the Secretary of War.

In the execution of their duties the auditor and the deputy auditor are authorized to summon witnesses, administer oaths, and to take evidence, and, in the pursuance of these provisions, may issue subpoenas and enforce the attendance of witnesses, as now provided by law.

The office of the auditor shall be under the general supervision of the Governor General and shall consist of the auditor and deputy auditor and such necessary assistants as may be prescribed by law.

SECT. 25. That any person aggrieved by the action or decision of the auditor in the settlement of his account or claim may, within one year, take an appeal in writing to the Governor General, which appeal shall specifically set forth the particular action of the auditor to which exception is taken, with the reason and authorities relied on for reversing such decision.

If the Governor General shall confirm the action of the auditor, he shall so endorse the appeal and transmit it to the auditor, and the action shall thereupon be final and conclusive. Should the Governor General fail to sustain the action of the auditor, he shall forthwith transmit his grounds of disapproval to the Secretary of War, together with the appeal and the papers necessary to a proper understanding of the matter. The decision of the Secretary of War in such case shall be final and conclusive.

SECT. 26. That the supreme court and the courts of first instance of the Philippine Islands shall possess and exercise jurisdiction as heretofore provided and such additional jurisdiction as shall hereafter be prescribed by law. The municipal courts of said islands shall possess and exercise jurisdiction as now provided by law, subject in all matters to such alteration and amendment as may be hereafter enacted by law; and the chief justice and associate justices of the supreme court shall hereafter be appointed by the President, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate of the United States. The judges of the court of first instance shall be appointed by the Governor General, by and with the advice and consent of the Philippine Senate: *Provided*, That the admiralty

jurisdiction of the supreme court and courts of first instance shall not be changed except by Act of Congress. That in all cases pending under the operation of existing laws, both criminal and civil, the jurisdiction shall continue until final judgment and determination.

SECT. 27. That the Supreme Court of the United States shall have jurisdiction to review, revise, reverse, modify, or affirm the final judgments and decrees of the Supreme Court of the Philippine Islands in all actions, cases, causes, and proceedings now pending therein or hereafter determined thereby in which the Constitution or any statute, treaty, title, right, or privilege of the United States is involved, or in causes in which the value in controversy exceeds \$25,000, or in which the title or possession of real estate exceeding in value the sum of \$25,000, to be ascertained by the oath of either party or of other competent witnesses, is involved or brought in question; and such final judgments or decrees may and can be reviewed, revised, reversed, modified, or affirmed by said Supreme Court of the United States on appeal or writ of error by the party aggrieved within the same time, in the same manner, under the same regulations, and by the same procedure, as far as applicable, as the final judgments and decrees of the district courts of the United States.

SECT. 28. That the government of the Philippine Islands may grant franchises and rights, including the authority to exercise the right of eminent domain, for the construction and operation of works of public utility and service, and may authorize said works to be constructed and maintained over and across the public property of the United States, including streets, highways, squares, and reservations, and over similar property of the government of said islands, and may adopt rules and regulations under which the provincial and municipal governments of the islands may grant the right to use and occupy such public property belonging to said Provinces or municipalities: *Provided*, That no private property shall be damaged or taken for any purpose under this section without just compensation, and that such authority to take and occupy land shall not authorize the taking, use, or occupation of any land except such as is required for the actual necessary purposes for



which the franchise is granted, and that no franchise or right shall be granted to any individual, firm, or corporation except under the conditions that it shall be subject to amendment, alteration, or repeal by the Congress of the United States, and that lands or right of use and occupation of lands thus granted shall revert to the governments by which they were respectively granted upon the termination of the franchises and rights under which they were granted or upon their revocation or repeal. That all franchises or rights granted under this Act shall forbid the issue of stock or bonds except in exchange for actual cash or for property at a fair valuation equal to the par value of the stock or bonds so issued; shall forbid the declaring of stock or bond dividends, and, in the case of public-service corporations, shall provide for the effective regulation of the charges thereof, for the official inspection and regulation of the books and accounts of such corporations, and for the payment of a reasonable percentage of gross earnings into the treasury of the Philippine Islands or of the Province or municipality within which such franchises are granted and exercised: *Provided further*, That it shall be unlawful for any corporation organized under this Act, or for any person, company, or corporation receiving any grant, franchise, or concession from the government of said islands, to use, employ, or contract for the labor of persons held in involuntary servitude; and any person, company, or corporation so violating the provisions of this Act shall forfeit all charters, grants, or franchises for doing business in said islands, in an action or proceeding brought for that purpose in any court of competent jurisdiction by any officer of the Philippine government, or on the complaint of any citizen of the Philippines, under such regulations and rules as the Philippine Legislature shall prescribe, and in addition shall be deemed guilty of an offense, and shall be punished by a fine of not more than \$10,000.

SECT. 29. That, except as in this Act otherwise provided, the salaries of all the officials of the Philippines not appointed by the President, including deputies, assistants, and other employees, shall be such and be so paid out of the revenues of the Philippines as shall from time to time be determined by the Philippine Legislature; and if the legislature shall fail to make an appropriation for



such salaries, the salaries so fixed shall be paid without the necessity of further appropriations therefor. The salaries of all officers and all expenses of the offices of the various officials of the Philippines appointed as herein provided by the President shall also be paid out of the revenues of the Philippines. The annual salaries of the following-named officials appointed by the President and so to be paid shall be: The Governor General, \$18,000; in addition thereto he shall be entitled to the occupancy of the buildings heretofore used by the chief executive of the Philippines, with the furniture and effects therein, free of rental; vice governor, \$10,000; chief justice of the supreme court, \$8,000; associate justices of the supreme court, \$7,500 each; auditor, \$6,000; deputy auditor, \$3,000.

SECT. 30. That the provisions of the foregoing section shall not apply to provincial and municipal officials; their salaries and the compensation of their deputies, assistants, and other help, as well as all other expenses incurred by the Provinces and municipalities, shall be paid out of the provincial and municipal revenues in such manner as the Philippine Legislature shall provide.

SECT. 31. That all laws or parts of laws applicable to the Philippines not in conflict with any of the provisions of this Act are hereby continued in force and effect.

APPROVED, AUGUST 29, 1916.

## INDEX

- Aborigines in the Islands, 1  
 Abucay, massacre of, 107  
 Acapulco, trade with, 112  
 Acuña's expedition against the Dutch, 106  
 Aetas, aborigines, 1; disappearing, 2  
 Aglipay schism, 285  
 Agriculture stimulated, 209  
 Aguinaldo, Emilio, 246, 250, 254; retreat of, 269; capture of, 271  
 Ali Mudin, 145, 153  
 Almazán, Don Pedro, 127  
 America discovered, 18  
 American rule in the Islands, 174  
 Americans, coming of, 252; hostilities with, 264; in the Visayan Islands, 265  
 Anda, Simón de, 152; memorial of, 166  
 Anitos, 70  
 Apayaos, 3  
 Arandía, Governor-general, 148  
 Assembly, Philippine, 294; and Commission, 296  
 Autonomous provincial and local government, 280  
  
 Backhouse, Thomas, 153, 154  
 Baginda, Rajah, 12  
 Balintauac, cry of, 244  
 Banal, Chief Miguel, 220  
 Bancao, apostasy of, 119  
 Banco Español-Filipino, 208  
 Bantilan, 146  
 Barangay, 'boat,' 7; 'settlement,' 57  
 Basco y Vargas, José, policy of, 170  
 Batanes, conquest of the, 174  
 Bautista, Ambrosio Rianzares, 256  
 Berenguer, Felix, proposes reforms, 175  
 Biacnabato, Pact of, 250  
 Blanco, Ramón, 243  
  
 Blood compact, 44  
 Bohol rebellion, 192  
 Bonaparte, Napoleon, 180  
 Bonifacio, Andrés, 241  
 Books, censorship of, 198  
 British, coming of, 149; take Manila, 150; depart, 158; foothold of, in Sulu, 158  
 Burgos, José, 222, 223; executed, 226  
 Bustamante, Fernando Manuel de, 135, 143  
 Busto, Lieutenant General, 153  
 Butu, Hadji, 307  
  
 Calamities, 191; earthquake of 1863, 216  
 Calderon, Felipe G., 262  
 Calendar corrected, 201  
 Camacho controversy, 164  
 Camerino, Eduardo, 221  
 Cano, Juan Sebastián del, 33, 38  
 Carvajal, Ciriaco Gonzales, 171  
 Cavite Revolt of 1872, 224  
 Cebu, Legaspi at, 44  
 Censorship, of books, 198; of the press, 210  
 Census of 1903, 294  
 Chinese, in the Philippines, 89; pirates, 90; early treaty with, 94; attitude toward, 94; revolts of, 97, 98; restriction of, 99; segregation of, 192  
 Cholera, epidemic of, 188  
 Christianity established, 77  
 Church and state, 129  
 Church fathers, 161  
 Civil government, 280  
 Civilization, first, 7; change in, 78  
 Clavería, Narciso, reforms of, 200  
 Clergy, 161; Filipino, 223  
 Cofradía of San José, 199; suppressed, 200

### 334 BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

- Columbus, Christopher, 18  
 Commerce, early, 110; with Mexico, 111; school of, 198; at Manila, 207; other ports opened, 209; growth of, 229  
 Constitution, new Spanish, 182, 224; Philippine, 262  
 Corcuera, Governor-general, 131; residencia of, 133; expedition of, against the Moros, 142  
 Cortes, the, 180; Philippines in, 180, 184, 186; dissolution of, in 1814, 182; of 1820, 184; of 1834, 186  
 Cosío, Toribio, 143  
 Cristóbal, Gaspar, 127  
 Crusades, 16  
 Cruz Palaris, Juan de la, 155  
 Cuesta, Archbishop, 135; favors visitation, 165  
 Currency, reforms in, 286
- Dasmariñas, Gómez Pérez, 86  
 Dasmariñas, Luis, 97  
 Dates and events, list of, 309  
 Dato, 7, 55, 80  
 De Guzmán, 139  
 De Sande, 139  
 De Vera, Melchor, 124  
 Dewey, George, 254  
 Dias, Bartholomeu, reaches Cape of Good Hope, 17  
 Ducós, Father José, exploits of, 147  
 Dutch in the East, 104-108
- Earthquake of 1863, 216  
 Economic progress, 170, 191  
 Economic Society of Friends, 170  
 Education, early, 213; reforms of 1863, 213; higher schools, 215  
 Encomiendas, 80; abolished, 82  
 Enforced labor, 82  
 Enrile, Governor Pascual, post roads of, 195  
 Epidemics, 281, 289  
 Episcopal Court, 130  
 Esteybar, Francisco de, 124
- Federal party, 276; reorganized, 292  
 Ferdinand VII, restoration of, 183
- Filipino clergy, charges against, 167; removal of, 223  
 Filipino enlightened class, 216  
 Filipino middle class, 209  
 Filipino reformers, 222  
 Filipinos, classes of, at the time of the conquest, 55; government of, 57; early laws of, 58-60; land ownership of, 62; industries of, 62; early trade of, 64; early civilization of, 66; early religion of, 68; marriage customs of, 71; burial customs of, 73  
 Finances, 304  
 Folgueras, Governor, measures of, 189; tries to establish a school of medicine, 189  
 Forbes, W. Cameron, 297  
 Friar lands, 283; bought by the government, 284
- Galleon trade, 113-116; result of, 116  
 Galvey, Guillermo, expedition of, 194  
 Gama, Vasco da, 17  
 Gardoqui, José, wise measures of, 184  
 Gil, Father, 242  
 Goiti, Martín de, in Luzon, 47, 52  
 Gómez, Feliciano, 223  
 Government, early, 80; later, 84; changes in government of provinces, 196; reforms in local, 231; reorganized, 274; difficulties of new, 281  
 Guerrero, Archbishop, 131  
 Guerrilla warfare, 270  
 Gumapos, Pedro, 124  
 Guzmán, de, 139
- Harrison, Francis Burton, 299  
 Health, public, 289  
 Hindu culture, 7
- Ilocos revolt of 1661, 127  
 Immigrating peoples, 3  
 Independista parties, 291  
 Indonesians, 1; origin of, 3  
 Inhabitants, first, 1  
 Inquisition, 133

- Isabella aids Columbus, 18  
 Isabella II, 219  
 Italian navigators, 16  
 Izquierdo, Rafael de, 224
- Jagor, Feodor, 201  
 Jesuits, expulsion of, 165; return of, 212  
 Jones Act, 302, 322  
 Jones bills, 301  
 Judiciary, organization of, 279
- Kabungsuwan, Shereef, 12  
 Kalinga uprising, 174  
 Katipunan, 240
- La Cruz, Apolinario de, 199; put to death, 200  
 Ladía, Don Pedro, planned revolt, 120  
 Lago, Fray Bernardo, 194  
 Lakandola, Rajah, 50  
 Lara, Manrique de, 122  
 Lardizábal, 198  
 La Torre, Carlos de, reforms of, 219  
 Lavezaris, Governor, 129  
 Legaspi, Miguel López de, expedition of, 41; at Cebu, 44; removes to Panay, 46; goes to Manila, 50; rebuilds the city, 51; death of, 51  
 Legislation, American control of, 291; dual control of, 294; Filipino control of, 300  
 Liberal movement, 218  
 Liberals, Spanish, 220  
 Liga Filipina, la, 237  
 Limahong, Chinese pirate, 90-94  
 Line of Demarcation, 18, 39  
 Loaisa, expedition of, 37  
 Lookout towers, 144  
 López-Jaena, Graciano, 236  
 Los Reyes, Ventura de, 181  
 Luna, General Antonio, 267; death of, 269
- Mabini, Apolinario, 263  
 Macapagal, Juan, 122  
 Macasiag, Jacinto, 124  
 Magellan, Ferdinand, 20; voyage of, 22; in the Philippines, 27; in Cebu, 29; death of, 30
- Magsanop, Juan, 127  
 Malaspina, Captain, 176  
 Malays, 1; origin of, 4; ancient settlement, 10  
 Malolos, fall of, 266  
 Malong, 123, 126; kingdom of, 124  
 Mandayas, 3  
 Mangyans, 1  
 Maniago, Francisco, 122  
 Manila, taken by Goiti, 48; changes in, 85; center of early trade, 110; taken by the British, 151; fall of, 257; battle of, 265  
 Manila Bay, battle of, 254  
 Mariveles, battles of, 104, 106  
 Martínez, Governor, 190  
 Merritt, General, military governor, 274  
 Metric system, 289  
 Mexico, trade with, 111; becomes independent of Spain, 185  
 Middle class, 209  
 Mohammedan Filipinos, 10  
 Mohammedanism, 11  
 Molukkas, discovered, 22; quarrel over, 37  
 Mongols, origin of, 3  
 Monopoly of tobacco, 171; other monopolies, 173; protests against, 174  
 Montojo, Admiral, 254  
 Moros, 10; wars with, 138; piracy of, 176  
 Municipalities, reorganization of, 279
- Napoleon Bonaparte, 180  
 Nationalization, 304  
 Nautical school founded, 189  
 Nava, Francisco de, 131  
 Navy, Philippine, 178  
 Negritos, 1  
 Newspaper, first, in Manila, 182; other newspapers, 185, 210  
 Novales, Captain Andrés, mutiny of, 189
- Obando, Governor, 145, 147  
 Obras Pías, 114



### 336 BRIEF HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINES

- Osmeña, Sergio, 296  
 Oyanguren, José, 203  
 Pact of Biacnabato, 250  
 Pampanga revolt, of 1645, 120; of 1660, 122  
 Panay Island bought by Malays, 9  
 Pardo, Felipe, 135  
 Parishes, 162  
 Paterno, Pedro A., 250  
 Peñalosa, Ronquillo de, 130  
 Peñaranda, José María, military engineer, 195  
 Philippine Assembly, 294  
 Philippine Commission, first, 275; second, 275  
 Philippine navy, 178  
 Philippine Republic, 261  
 Philippine Revolution, 240; government of, 256; fall of Manila, 257  
 Pilar, General Gregorio del, 270  
 Pilar, Marcelo H. del, 235  
 Pineda, Antonio, botanist, 176  
 Pirates, Chinese, 90; Moro, 176  
 Playa Honda, battle of, 107  
 Polavieja's campaign, 248  
 Ports, improvements of, 288  
 Portugal annexed to Spain, 103  
 Portuguese try to drive out Spanish, 101-103; blockade Cebu, 102; wars of, with the Dutch, 104  
 Portuguese navigators, 16  
 Postal savings banks, 289  
 Press, censorship of, 210  
 Progress of the Islands, 178  
 Prosperity, 306  
 Provincial governors, convention of, 292  
 Punta de Flechas, battle of, 141  
 Quezón, Manuel L., 298, 299  
 Races, blending of, 8  
 Rada, Father, 129  
 Railways, 288  
 Raon, José, 165  
 Reaction, 218  
 Rebellion, Tamblot, 118; Sumoroy, 120; Malong's, 123; Bohol, 192  
 Rebellions, early, 83  
 Reforms, social, 191; in government, 201; of la Torre, 219; movement of, 229, 232; late attempts at, 238  
 Religion of Filipinos, early, 68; changes in, 76  
 Religious orders, 161  
 Republic, Philippine, 261  
 Revolt, of 1574, 92; Pampanga, of 1645, 120; Ilocos, of 1661, 127; in Pangasinan, 155; in Ilocos Sur, 155; in Cagayan, 157; Cavite, 224  
 Revolts in the seventeenth century, 118  
 Revolution, Spanish, of 1868, 218  
 Revolutionary Government, 256  
 Ricafort, Governor, social reforms of, 191; puts down Bohol rebellion, 192; segregates the Chinese, 192  
 Right of sanctuary, 131  
 Rinderpest, 282  
 Rivera, Primo de, 248  
 Rizal, José, 233; novels of, 234; executed, 247  
 Roads, building of, 195, 288; necessity of, 196  
 Rojo, Archbishop, 152  
 Ronquillo de Peñalosa, 130  
 Royal Audiencia, 130  
 Royal Company of the Philippines, 173  
 Saavedra, Alvaro de, expedition of, 38  
 Salamanca, Governor, 141  
 Salazar, Domingo de, 130  
 Salcedo, Diego de, 133  
 Salcedo, Juan, 51; death of, 52  
 Samals, 203  
 Samaniego, mutiny of, 200  
 Sanctuary, right of, 131  
 Sande, Governor de, 139  
 Santa Justa, Basilio Sancho de, 165, 167  
 Schools, early, 78; higher, 215; establishment of, by Americans, 278  
 Secularization, 165, 166; under Anda, 167; end of, 168

- Silan, Diego, 156; assassinated, 157
- Silva's expedition against the Dutch, 106
- Simbahan, 70
- Slavery abolished, 77
- Social reforms, 191
- Solidaridad, La, 236
- Soliman, Rajah, 48
- Spain, under Napoleon, 180; loses Mexico, 185
- Spanish, expeditions of, to the Philippines, 37; extent of power in Philippines, 52; loss of prestige, 155
- Spanish liberals, 220
- Spanish Revolution of 1868, 218
- Spanish rule, effect of, 86; attitude of Filipinos toward, 118; ended, 258
- Spanish-American War, 254; peace, 258
- Spanish-Filipino Association, 236
- Spice Islands discovered, 22
- State and church, 129
- Steamships, arrival of, 204
- Subanuns, 5
- Suez Canal, 219
- Sulu, sultan of, 205
- Sumoroy rebellion of 1649, 120
- Surnames given to Filipinos, 202
- Survey of the Philippines, 175
- Taft, William H., civil governor, 274; retires, 286
- Tagal defeated, 141
- Tagbanuas, 5
- Tamblot rebellion, 118
- Taxation, reform in, 230
- Tila Pass, defense of, 270
- Tingco's conspiracy, 98
- Tobacco, monopoly of, 171; benefit of the monopoly of, 172
- Tordesillas, Treaty of, 20, 37
- Trade, routes of, 14; with Chinese, 89; early, 110; with Mexico, 111; restrictions on, 111; galleon, 113; increase in foreign, 306
- Tribute, 81
- Turks, take Jerusalem, 14; take Constantinople, 16
- United States, relations with, 261; Islands ceded to, 261; war with, 264
- University of Santo Tomás, 215
- Urbiztondo, Governor, 205
- Urdaneta, Andrés de, 38; with Legaspi, 41
- Valdez, Governor, 144
- Vargas, Juan de, 135
- Vera, Santiago de, 130
- Villalobos, Ruy López de, expedition of, 39; renames the Philippines, 40
- Visitation, 162, 164
- War with the United States, 264; last year of, 283
- Watch towers, 144
- Wright, Luke E., policy of, 287
- Zamboanga, founded, 140; settled, 202
- Zamora, Jacinto, 226
- Zapote Bridge, battle of, 266
- Zulaibar, Fray Juan Antonio de, 168











**14 DAY USE**  
**RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED**  
**LOAN DEPT.**

1. This book is due on the last date stamped below, or  
 on the date to which renewed.  
 Renewed books are subject to immediate recall.

| RECEIVED  |                      |
|-----------|----------------------|
| TI        | AUG 5 - '66 - 1 PM   |
| NOV       | LOAN DEPT.           |
|           |                      |
|           | JUN 26 1971 7 9      |
|           |                      |
|           | JUN 26 1971 12 PM 14 |
| 18 JUL 12 | DEPT. EN             |
| 19 JUL 12 |                      |
| 20 JUL 12 |                      |
| 21 JUL 12 |                      |
| 22 JUL 12 |                      |
| 23 JUL 12 |                      |
| 24 JUL 12 |                      |
| 25 JUL 12 |                      |
| 26 JUL 12 |                      |
| 27 JUL 12 |                      |
| 28 JUL 12 |                      |
| 29 JUL 12 |                      |
| 30 JUL 12 |                      |
| 31 JUL 12 |                      |
| 1 AUG 13  |                      |
| 2 AUG 13  |                      |
| 3 AUG 13  |                      |
| 4 AUG 13  |                      |
| 5 AUG 13  |                      |
| 6 AUG 13  |                      |
| 7 AUG 13  |                      |
| 8 AUG 13  |                      |
| 9 AUG 13  |                      |
| 10 AUG 13 |                      |
| 11 AUG 13 |                      |
| 12 AUG 13 |                      |
| 13 AUG 13 |                      |
| 14 AUG 13 |                      |
| 15 AUG 13 |                      |
| 16 AUG 13 |                      |
| 17 AUG 13 |                      |
| 18 AUG 13 |                      |
| 19 AUG 13 |                      |
| 20 AUG 13 |                      |
| 21 AUG 13 |                      |
| 22 AUG 13 |                      |
| 23 AUG 13 |                      |
| 24 AUG 13 |                      |
| 25 AUG 13 |                      |
| 26 AUG 13 |                      |
| 27 AUG 13 |                      |
| 28 AUG 13 |                      |
| 29 AUG 13 |                      |
| 30 AUG 13 |                      |
| 31 AUG 13 |                      |
| 1 SEP 13  |                      |
| 2 SEP 13  |                      |
| 3 SEP 13  |                      |
| 4 SEP 13  |                      |
| 5 SEP 13  |                      |
| 6 SEP 13  |                      |
| 7 SEP 13  |                      |
| 8 SEP 13  |                      |
| 9 SEP 13  |                      |
| 10 SEP 13 |                      |
| 11 SEP 13 |                      |
| 12 SEP 13 |                      |
| 13 SEP 13 |                      |
| 14 SEP 13 |                      |
| 15 SEP 13 |                      |
| 16 SEP 13 |                      |
| 17 SEP 13 |                      |
| 18 SEP 13 |                      |
| 19 SEP 13 |                      |
| 20 SEP 13 |                      |
| 21 SEP 13 |                      |
| 22 SEP 13 |                      |
| 23 SEP 13 |                      |
| 24 SEP 13 |                      |
| 25 SEP 13 |                      |
| 26 SEP 13 |                      |
| 27 SEP 13 |                      |
| 28 SEP 13 |                      |
| 29 SEP 13 |                      |
| 30 SEP 13 |                      |
| 1 OCT 13  |                      |
| 2 OCT 13  |                      |
| 3 OCT 13  |                      |
| 4 OCT 13  |                      |
| 5 OCT 13  |                      |
| 6 OCT 13  |                      |
| 7 OCT 13  |                      |
| 8 OCT 13  |                      |
| 9 OCT 13  |                      |
| 10 OCT 13 |                      |
| 11 OCT 13 |                      |
| 12 OCT 13 |                      |
| 13 OCT 13 |                      |
| 14 OCT 13 |                      |
| 15 OCT 13 |                      |
| 16 OCT 13 |                      |
| 17 OCT 13 |                      |
| 18 OCT 13 |                      |
| 19 OCT 13 |                      |
| 20 OCT 13 |                      |
| 21 OCT 13 |                      |
| 22 OCT 13 |                      |
| 23 OCT 13 |                      |
| 24 OCT 13 |                      |
| 25 OCT 13 |                      |
| 26 OCT 13 |                      |
| 27 OCT 13 |                      |
| 28 OCT 13 |                      |
| 29 OCT 13 |                      |
| 30 OCT 13 |                      |
| 31 OCT 13 |                      |
| 1 NOV 13  |                      |
| 2 NOV 13  |                      |
| 3 NOV 13  |                      |
| 4 NOV 13  |                      |
| 5 NOV 13  |                      |
| 6 NOV 13  |                      |
| 7 NOV 13  |                      |
| 8 NOV 13  |                      |
| 9 NOV 13  |                      |
| 10 NOV 13 |                      |
| 11 NOV 13 |                      |
| 12 NOV 13 |                      |
| 13 NOV 13 |                      |
| 14 NOV 13 |                      |
| 15 NOV 13 |                      |
| 16 NOV 13 |                      |
| 17 NOV 13 |                      |
| 18 NOV 13 |                      |
| 19 NOV 13 |                      |
| 20 NOV 13 |                      |
| 21 NOV 13 |                      |
| 22 NOV 13 |                      |
| 23 NOV 13 |                      |
| 24 NOV 13 |                      |
| 25 NOV 13 |                      |
| 26 NOV 13 |                      |
| 27 NOV 13 |                      |
| 28 NOV 13 |                      |
| 29 NOV 13 |                      |
| 30 NOV 13 |                      |
| 1 DEC 13  |                      |
| 2 DEC 13  |                      |
| 3 DEC 13  |                      |
| 4 DEC 13  |                      |
| 5 DEC 13  |                      |
| 6 DEC 13  |                      |
| 7 DEC 13  |                      |
| 8 DEC 13  |                      |
| 9 DEC 13  |                      |
| 10 DEC 13 |                      |
| 11 DEC 13 |                      |
| 12 DEC 13 |                      |
| 13 DEC 13 |                      |
| 14 DEC 13 |                      |
| 15 DEC 13 |                      |
| 16 DEC 13 |                      |
| 17 DEC 13 |                      |
| 18 DEC 13 |                      |
| 19 DEC 13 |                      |
| 20 DEC 13 |                      |
| 21 DEC 13 |                      |
| 22 DEC 13 |                      |
| 23 DEC 13 |                      |
| 24 DEC 13 |                      |
| 25 DEC 13 |                      |
| 26 DEC 13 |                      |
| 27 DEC 13 |                      |
| 28 DEC 13 |                      |
| 29 DEC 13 |                      |
| 30 DEC 13 |                      |
| 31 DEC 13 |                      |

DE 100 01A-100-20 '66  
 (37704) 016701

Goodman Library  
 University of California  
 Berkeley











CPSIA information can be obtained  
at [www.ICGtesting.com](http://www.ICGtesting.com)  
Printed in the USA  
LVHW082123120223  
739292LV00022B/336



9 781375 694926

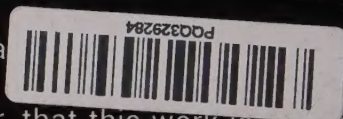




This work has been selected by scholars as being culturally important, and is part of the knowledge base of civilization as we know it. This work was reproduced from the original artifact, and remains as true to the original work as possible. Therefore, you will see the original copyright references, library stamps (as most of these works have been housed in our most important libraries around the world), and other notations in the work.

This work is in the public domain in the United States of America, and possibly other nations. Within the United States, you may freely copy and distribute this work, as no entity (individual or corporate) has a copyright on the body of the work.

As a reproduction of a historical artifact, it contains certain missing or blurred pages, poor quality, etc. Scholars believe, and we concur, that this work is important enough to be preserved, reproduced, and made generally available to the public. We appreciate your support of the preservation process, and thank you for being an important part of keeping this knowledge alive and relevant.



Published by Andesite Press, an  
imprint of Creative Media Partners.  
[support.creativemedia.io](http://support.creativemedia.io)

